CHRYSAL:

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF A

GUINEA.

WHEREIN ARE EXHIBITED

VIEWS OF SEVERAL STRIKING SCENES:

WITH

CURIOUS and INTERESTING ANECDOTES of the moſt Noted Perſons in every Rank of Life, whoſe Hands it paſſed through,

IN

AMERICA, ENGLAND, HOLLAND, GERMANY AND PORTUGAL.

——Hold the Mirror up to Nature,
To ſhow Vice its own image, Virtue its own Likeneſs,
And the very Age and Body of the Times
His form and Preſſure. SHAKESPEARE.

Qui capit, ille facit.

By an ADEPT.

VOL. IV.

LONDON:
Printed for J. WATSON, M. PEARCE, S. LEWIS, G. LONGMAN, and W. CROWDER.

M,DCC,LXXXV.

BRITISH MUSEUM

CONTENTS of VOL. IV.

BOOK the FIRST.

CHAP. I.

Chryſal continues the account of the members. The hiſtory of a remarkable perſon is given for a remarkable purpoſe. His pleaſures bring him into diſtreſs, from which he extricates himſelf, by making them ſubſervient to his intereſt, and gets into a good KEEPING. Not content with the mother, he caſts his eye upon the daughter alſo, but is diſappointed, and forced to take up with a ſhare of her fortune, for procuring her in marriage for another. He reſolves to be a GREAT MAN; and for that purpoſe breaks with his KEEPER, when he has got from her all ſhe has to give - - - - - Page 1

CHAP. II.

Continued. He begins his ſcheme ſucceſsfully, by ſtealing a marriage. His late KEEPER makes an artful demand of all the preſents ſhe had given him, which he anſwers as artfully. He advances in his ſcheme, by ſteps exactly in his character, and gets into favour with a great perſon. Chryſal makes ſome remarks on the origin of the affections of the human mind, and the different manner of breeding men and horſes, with the conſequence - - - - - - 7

CHAP. III.

Continued. He practiſes a ſucceſsful method for gaining the confidence of his new patron, which he turns to good account. Hiſtory of the lover who ſucceeded him in the good graces of his late KEEPER. He ſtrives to prevent his taking advantage of his influence over her; and finding he fails in that, fools him into diſtreſs, which brings his life in his power. He ſlights many motives which might have had weight with others, and takes advantage of the opportunity to get rid of him, and all farther trouble about him. He continues to dupe him till the laſt moment, when his eyes are opened, and all comes out - - - - - - 11

CHAP. IV.

Continued. A view of his political character introduces a maxim not ſufficiently attended to. He fails in a great ſtroke, and makes ſo many wrong ones, that he is kicked out of power,

and forced to be content with profit, which he purſues through thick and thin. An unhappy event gives him an opportunity of ſhowing his ingratitude to his late patron, on the merit of which he riſes to higher power than ever, which he wiſely exerts behind the curtain, and leaves HIS TOOLS to bear the blame. An account of the juſt fruits of ſo much ſucceſs concludes his ſtory - - - - - 17

CHAP. V.

Chryſal leaves the convent. His maſter proceeds in character. He practiſes a new manner of courtſhip, and ſignalizes his talents for intrigue, by debauching the daughter of his friend. Her diſtreſs, when too late, gives him ſome ſlight qualms of conſcience; but he ſoon recovers, and goes on in his enterprize - - - - - - - - - 22

CHAP. VI.

Continued. Chryſal's maſter makes his triumph public, by ſeducing his new miſtreſs away from her father's houſe. The manner in which he impoſed upon them both to effect this; with the conſolation he gave her for ſome natural conſequences of his gallantry. His triumph is compleated by her going upon the town, and her father's breaking his heart - 26

CHAP. VII.

" Chryſal's maſter pays his court to a great perſon, who ſeems " not much to reliſh his humour, and expreſſes ſome unfa- " ſhionable ſentiments, concerning polite pleaſures. In the " courſe of a regular progreſſion, Chryſal comes into the poſ- " ſeſſion of a beau." Hiſtory of a beau, with a journal of his manner of life for one day. Chryſal changes his ſervice, in a common way, for that of a LADY OF FASHION - 31

CHAP. VIII.

Hiſtory of Chryſal's new miſtreſs. She is brought into diſtreſs by her beauty, from which a lucky interview relieves her. The danger of arguing in favour of inclination againſt reaſon. Her friend puts her to ſchool to learn manners, and afterwards marries her. His family ſhow impotent reſentment, at which he is ſo enraged that he makes his will, by which he leaves her his whole fortune; and then dies. An uncommon inſtance of the good-nature of the world - - 38

CHAP. IX.

The common conſequence of overdoing things. Her huſband's relations find out a flaw in his will. The comfort of having good

good lawyers to keep up a client's ſpirits. For the advantage of having two ſtrings to her bow, ſhe enters into an engagement of marriage, under an heavy penalty. The event of her law-ſuit ſhows the prudence of this precaution. She is caſt; her lover flies off, and ſhe ſues him for the penalty of his engagement. He begs the money among his friends, and then by a nice fineſſe plays her own game back upon her, and flings her off with half. Chryſal changes his ſervice - 44

CHAP. X.

Chryſal makes ſome out-of-the-way remarks on matrimony. Deſcription and hiſtory of his new maſter. Chryſal vindicates his uſing a common expreſſion. His maſter's firſt riſe from a beggar to a foot-boy. He gains his maſter's favour, of which he makes the uſe natural to be expected from his firſt education. Some account of a relation of his PRINCIPAL's. The danger of giving advice. Chryſal's maſter inſinuates himſelf into the COLONEL's liking, and undermines his Principal, in his regard - - - - - 50

CHAP. XI.

Farther account of the COLONEL. Chryſal's maſter, in conjunction with a female aſſociate proper for his purpoſe, completes his ſcheme of alienating the COLONEL's regard from his family, of which he gives a proof, of a moſt extraordinary nature. A remarkable inſtance of Chryſal's maſter's talents for a particular kind of wit, with a ſtriking account of the worthy manner in which he and his fair aſſociate acquitted themſelves of the truſt repoſed in them by the COLONEL - - - 56

CHAP. XII.

Chryſal's maſter receives an account of the death of the COLONEL. He finds, after much deliberation, that he cannot fling his worthy aſſociate out of the whole ſpoil, and therefore prudently reſolves to ſhare it with her by a marriage, of which he draws a comfortable picture. He urges his ſuit, and ſhe ſtrives to evade it by arguments conſiſtent with both their characters. He carries his point in a particular manner - - 61

CHAP. XIII.

Account of the methods which Chryſal's maſter took to obviate the effects of his PRINCIPAL's reſentment, with the characteriſtic converſation that paſſed between them, on the former's avowing the COLONEL's will. Chryſal's maſter over-ſhoots his mark, and provokes his PRINCIPAL to do more than he-

ever intended. An uncommon inſtance of the juſtice of the world. Chryſal's maſter obliges the lady to court him in her turn, and at length marries her. The conſequences of ſuch a marriage, and fruits of the ſucceſs of all their ſchemes - 66

CHAP. XIV.

Chryſal's maſter deſigns to ſet up a coach, but wants a material article toward making a proper figure with it. He conſults with an HERALD, who gives him an elaborate diſſertation, not the moſt pleaſing to him, on COATS OF ARMS, and the modern methods of making them, in which he unfolds many curious myſteries, and undertakes at laſt, on proper encouragement, to make him a gentleman. Chryſal changes his ſervice. Converſation between his new maſter and an ANTIQUARIAN. Curious arguments, by which he proves the genuineneſs and importance of certain relics of antiquity. Chryſal changes his ſervice - - - - - - - 71

CHAP. XV.

A modeſt method of ſeeking fame. Chryſal's maſter confirms himſelf in his reſolution to gratify an uncommon curioſity, by a great example. The judicious and learned manner in which he claſſed and entered his new acquiſitions. Curious remark on the value of books. He goes to an action, where he makes an extraordinary purchaſe. Chryſal changes his ſervice for that of the Auctioneer. Specimen and effects of his new maſter's eloquence, learning, and judgment - - - - 81

CHAP. XVI.

An unſavoury accident ſtops him ſhort in his harangue. He turns off the jeſt with another, and accounts learnedly for what has happened. The real cauſe and conſequence of that accident. Reflections on auctioneering, and the cauſes of its ſucceſs. - - - - - - - 87

CHAP. XVII.

Chryſal's maſter is viſited by a CONNOISEUR, to whom he gives a ſhort receipt how to make his pictures ſell, and makes ſome ſtriking remarks on the diſregard people ſhow for their families, which ſend his viſitor away in a huff - - - 91

CHAP. XVIII.

Chryſal's maſter receives an agreeable ſummons. His encomiums on the generoſity of merchants. An account of the way ma-

ny of them acquire reputation for taſte and judgment. He meets the merchant, who conſults him on a different branch of his buſineſs from that which he expected. Chryſal's maſter, in order to encourage his cuſtomer, gives a large account of his own abilities, and opens ſome curious ſecrets in his buſineſs. A bargain is ſtruck, to the mutual ſatisfaction of both parties; and Chryſal changes his ſervice for that of the merchant - 95

CHAP. XIX.

Motive of Chryſal's new maſter for making ſuch a bargain, with the many and great advantages a merchant may make of being in the houſe. A ſhort ſketch of an election. The curious method which Chryſal's maſter took to evade the laws againſt bribery. He takes offence at the unreaſonable preſumption of his conſtituents, and reſolves to make the moſt of the bargain he has bought from them, which, by a ſingular piece of management, he propoſes to make cheaper than they think. Chryſal changes his ſervice for that of the idol of an inn. The conſequences of electioneering. Some account of Chryſal's new miſtreſs. He quits her ſervice for a curious purpoſe. An expedient to prevent the ſale of poiſon for mind and body. Chryſal again changes his ſervice - - - 100

CHAP. XX.

Account of Chryſal's new maſter. His heroic ſpirit and reſolution to puſh for a penſion or pillory. Meeting between him and a poet, who turns the tables upon him. A curious method of forming a judgment of a work of genius. Chryſal's maſter is beaten out of all his art, and for once buys a book by quality not quantity. The value of an author's name. Chryſal changes his ſervice - - - - - 105

CHAP. XXI.

Some account of the company to which Chryſal's new maſter went. His behaviour to a young female who accoſted him in his way home. He takes her to a tavern for an uncommon purpoſe, where he treats her uncommonly, and goes home with her from as uncommon a motive. Account of what he ſaw in her habitation, with the manner in which he behaved there. He takes another lodging for the whole family, where he leaves them abruptly, to ſave himſelf and them trouble 110

BOOK THE SECOND.

CHAP. I.

Chryſal gives ſome account of his maſter. Reaſon of his having been bred to, and miſcarried in a particular profeſſion. Intereſting remarks on the different kinds of merit neceſſary to eminence in different profeſſions, confirmed by ſtriking inſtances of their ſucceſs in each. Natural conſequence of his being forced into a profeſſion againſt his inclination. He is compelled by diſtreſs to exert his abilities. Contradictions in his character, and the particular turn of his works accounted for. He viſits his new family. Affecting ſtory of an officer - - - - - - - 118.

CHAP. II.

Chryſal's maſter carries him to viſit an old acquaintance, who behaves in character on hearing the officer's ſtory, and ſurprizes Chryſal's maſter with an account of his having turned PATRIOT. The general motives for ſuch a ſtep, with ſome remarks on the difference between practice and profeſſion, in different inſtances. Inſignificancy of private characters in attacks upon a miniſtry, and why. Reflections on the origin and uſe of SATIRE, and the abuſe of the terms GOOD and ILL-NATURE, with the reaſon why ſo many cry out againſt ſatire. Chryſal changes his ſervice in a common way. - 127

CHAP. III.

Chryſal ſums up the character of his late maſter. Different opinions for and againſt the propriety and benefit of SATIRE. The former ſupported by good authority. Reaſon of ſome inconvenience attending the indulgence of ſuch a turn. Character of Chryſal's new maſter concluded from a former ſketch. He waits upon his patron. Character of him; with his motives for ſuch a patronage. He gives ſtriking reaſons for objecting to ſome parts of Chryſal's maſter's pamphlet, which the other makes ſome weak attempts to vindicate. Chryſal's maſter enjoys the pleaſure of tracing his own fame. - 134

CHAP. IV.

Chryſal's maſter receives an unwelcome viſit at an unſeaſonable time. His extraordinary behaviour before his ſuperiors. He is ſent to priſon. CHRYSAL makes ſome unpopular remarks on certain intereſting ſubjects. Conſequences of his maſter's impriſonment, with an account of his behaviour in it - 140

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

Chryſal's maſter is viſited in priſon by his patron; and from what motive. His conduct on being ſet at liberty, and the conſequence of it. Remarkable grounds on which he was ſet at liberty, with a conjecture at the reaſon of fixing upon them. Chryſal makes an enquiry into certain matters, much talked of, and little underſtood - - - - - - 144

CHAP. VI.

Chryſal's maſter takes a foreign tour. Remarks upon national reflections, and attacks upon private characters. Chryſal's maſter is called to an account for certain improper liberties, by a very improper perſon, whom he treats with uncommon propriety. Chryſal makes ſome out-of-the-way reflections on a queſtion much canvaſſed to little purpoſe - - - 148

CHAP. VII.

Chryſal's maſter's late conduct draws him into a new ſcrape, in which he comes off but ſecond beſt. He takes advantage of his misfortune to make his eſcape from a greater. He ſuffers the reſentment of his enemies, as far as they can reach him, and meets from his friends the fate of all uſeleſs tools, after having ſerved them with improbable ſucceſs. A ſtriking inſtance of the advantage of an upright judge, and equal laws. Chryſal changes his ſervice - - - - 153

CHAP. VIII.

Reaſon of the joy with which Chryſal was received by his new maſter. Account of a curious, though not uncommon way of getting a living. Converſation between Chryſal's maſter and his gueſt. They compare notes on their different attempts in the literary trade. Chryſal's maſter is encouraged by his friend, from his own example. A remarkable account of a certain matter that made much noiſe - - - 157

CHAP. IX.

Chryſal's maſter makes ſome ſtriking remarks on his friend's account of this myſterious tranſaction, and draws inferences from it, not commonly attended to. He entertains his friend with a curious ſong, who makes an important hit, juſt in his own character, upon it. Chryſal's maſter boggles a little at firſt at his friend's propoſal, but is encouraged, by his example, to undertake it - - - - - - 163

CHAP. X.

Chryſal's maſter purſues his ſcheme, and violates moral honeſty to ſerve the cauſe of virtue and religion. He waits upon his patron,

patron, who honeſtly refuſes a character to which he knows he has no right; but undertakes the affair from a more prevailing motive, in which he is remarkably aſſiſted by another perſon of leſs modeſty, who pleads the cauſe of religion and virtue in vain, till honour at length turns the ſcale in their favour. Chryſal's maſter is diſappointed of his hopes, and makes uſe of an expedient in character, to eſcape from the juſt reward of all his labours. Chryſal changes his ſervice - - 167

CHAP. XI.

Chryſal again changes his ſervice. His new maſter is obliged to pay expedition fees, to get over artificial delays. He and his miſtreſs ſet out on a long journey, to do what might have been better done at home. Chryſal makes ſome intereſting reflections on a moſt important ſubject. Story of Chryſal's maſter. Chryſal continues his reflections on the ſame ſubject, which he conſiders in a farther and moſt affecting point of view. Chryſal changes his ſervice - - 172

CHAP. XII.

Chryſal's new maſter ſtrikes out an adventure. He is ſmitten with a girl in a travelling-waggon, and changes his appearance to get admiſſion to her. Account of the company in the waggon. A good-natured miſtake of one of the paſſengers gives occaſion to a broil, which is put an end to by an accident that does not mend the matter - - 177

CHAP. XIII.

Chryſal's maſter experiences ſome comfortable conſequences from the obliging diſpoſition of the waggoner. He purſues his deſign, by paying uncommon civility to his miſtreſs's mother. Converſation and behaviour of the company. Chryſal's maſter, in the purſuit of his deſign, meets an adventure that cools his paſſion, and reaſſembles the company, when they are all like to be at fault, till one of them luckily hits off the ſcent - - - - - - 182

CHAP. XIV.

The advantage of a ready aſſurance. The methodiſt accounts curiouſly for what he has done; and turning the tables upon Chryſal's maſter, charges him with robbery, who is thereupon obliged to diſcover himſelf, but is contradicted by one of the company, who boaſts of a curious acquaintance with him in his own character. He is luckily recognized by a footman, whoſe maſter extricates him from his diſtreſs, and makes out the miſtakes that had cauſed ſo much confuſion - 187

CHAP.

CHAP. XV.

Chryſal gives a ſtriking account of his maſter. He arrives in London, and pays a viſit to his miſtreſs. His curious method of courting. His miſtreſs makes him a preſent of half her fortune beforehand, in return for which he promiſes to marry her next day, and then goes to his girl. Difference in his behaviour to the two naturally accounted for. An uncommon gueſt at a wedding, with as uncommon a manner of celebrating a nuptial night, ſhow a ſtill more uncommon inſtance of matrimonial complaiſance. Chryſal changes his ſervice 193

CHAP. XVI.

Chryſal makes ſome reflections, not likely to be much regarded. His maſter pays a love-viſit to a young lady, whoſe father interpoſes unpolitely, and makes ſome out-of-the-way objections. Chryſal's maſter hits upon a ſcheme for getting over them. He propoſes marriage on certain terms, which are agreed to, and the day fixed at a little diſtance - - 199

CHAP. XVII.

Chryſal's maſter is privately married. Not ſatisfied with one wife for love, he wants another for money. He propoſes the matter to his wife, on whoſe refuſal he diſcloſes his grand ſcheme; in which, deep as it is laid, he has the mortification to find himſelf anticipated, and his own weapons turned upon himſelf. Conſequences of this diſcovery. Chryſal's maſter takes a common method of ſilencing ſcandal. Chryſal changes his ſervice - - - - - 204

CHAP. XVIII.

Chryſal gives an account of certain intereſting occurrences. An extraordinary definition of a common word. Great expectations diſappointed. The conſequence of planning in the cloſet the operations of the field, with the origin of that ſagacious practice - - - - - 211

CHAP. XIX.

Continued. The natural event of ſuch a ſituation. The general, victorious over himſelf, quits the purſuit of military glory for the practice of the virtues of peace. Perfidy of the enemy juſtly puniſhed. The army is formed again under the command of a GERMAN, and a ſugar-plum given to the ENGLISH to ſtop their mouths at ſuch an inſult - - 214

CHRYSAL:

OR, THE

ADVENTURES

OF A

GUINEA.

CHAP. I.

CHRYSAL *continues the account of the members. The hiſtory of a remarkable perſon is given for a remarkable purpoſe. His pleaſures bring him into diſtreſs, from which he extricates himſelf, by making them ſubſervient to his intereſt, and gets into a good* KEEPING. *Not content with the mother, he caſts his eye upon the daughter alſo, but is diſappointed, and forced to take up with a ſhare of her fortune, for procuring her in marriage for another. He reſolves to be* A GREAT MAN; *and, for that purpoſe, breaks with his* KEEPER, *when he has got from her all ſhe had to give.*

ONE of the moſt ſpecious arguments alleged againſt the obligation to virtue, is the ſucceſs that is often obſerved to attend the violation of it,

in the general purſuits of the world. Of this you ſee the ſtrongeſt inſtance which this age has afforded, in that man who ſits at the left hand of the *ſuperior*, wrapped up in the conſciouſneſs of his own importance, and ſmiling contemptuouſly at the company around him, while they believe he is joining in their mirth.

A particular account of his life would lead into too great a length. It would ſeem a ſatire on mankind, rather than a detail of the actions of one man. However, as a ſhort ſketch of it may be of advantage, by unveiling this myſtery in the conduct of heaven, and proving the inſufficiency of the higheſt proſperity to confer happineſs, even in the hour of attainment, when that proſperity is not founded in, and procured by, virtue, I will juſt run over the great heads of his ſtory, with that brevity which the diſagreeableneſs of the ſubject naturally dictates.

The opening of his life gave no proſpect of his preſent exalted ſtation. Pleaſure, in every licentious exceſs, ſoon diſſipated a ſmall patrimony; and he was hardly entered into man's eſtate, when want, of his own earning, began to ſtare him in the face.

The peculiar caſt of a man's mind is in nothing more ſtrongly ſhown, than in the expedients he has recourſe to, in order to extricate him from difficulties. Inſtead of quitting the vices which had brought him into this embarraſſment, he reſolved, on the firſt alarm, to build his hopes of fortune on them, by purſuing them in a different manner. Experienced in all the myſteries of intrigue, he knew that age and deformity will purchaſe pleaſures, for which youth and beauty expect to be flattered, if not even paid. Unreſtrained, therefore,

fore, by any ſcruples of honour or conſcience, he directly determined to fix upon ſome wealthy female of the former claſs, and never doubted making her paſſion repay him manifold, what he had expended on the gratification of his own.

I ſee the abhorrence with which the mention of ſuch a ſcheme ſtrikes you. Venal proſtitution in the female ſex, though cut off from every other method of prolonging a wretched exiſtence, is the loweſt ſtate to which it can ſink. What then can be ſaid of a man, who, uncompelled by ſuch irreſiſtible neceſſity, voluntarily gives up the dignity of his nature, and, hiring himſelf to be the ſlave of luſts, which are a diſgrace to it, contentedly eats the bread of infamy and vice? Language yet wants a name for ſuch baſeneſs.

This hopeful ſcheme was no ſooner formed, than carried into execution. As his character gained him eaſy acceſs to all ſuch as were proper for his purpoſe, he immediately ſingled out an old dowager, in whoſe diſpoſal the dotage of a dying huſband had left the accumulated wealth of ſeveral ages of ſucceſsful induſtry. Such a quarry engaged all his attention in the purſuit. He paid his addreſſes to her, though deſtitute of every thing that could raiſe natural deſire, with ſo much aſſiduity and warmth, that ſhe readily received him into her good graces; and, *in return for the pleaſure ſhe found in his converſation*, laviſhed her fortune upon him, with a profuſion that even exceeded his hopes.

From the principle on which he ſet out, it may be judged, that he did not neglect to improve ſuch an opportunity of repairing his broken fortune, and laying up a fund for a future day, out of the overflowing of her untimely fondneſs. But, unbounded

bounded as her generoſity was, he was far from being content, while any thing farther remained poſſibly to be got from her. Beſides the great wealth which was directly in her power, a very large eſtate was, by family ſettlements, to deſcend to an only daughter whom ſhe had by her huſband. As ſoon therefore as her modeſt lover had got poſſeſſion of the former, his heart yearned for the latter alſo, with as much greedineſs as if his wants were only increaſed by his acquiſitions.

But though he was ſeldom long at a loſs for means to accompliſh any thing he had in view, as he was under no reſtraint from principle in the choice of them, there was an obſtacle in his way here, which all the fertility of his genius could not ſurmount. This was, his connection with the mother, the nature of which he well knew would never let her conſent to a ſcheme deſtructive of itſelf; for he had no fear of her making oppoſition, from motives of honour or virtue, to any thing that did not claſh with that, as he found none in his own conſcience even to this, though contrary to the firſt principles of nature.

Since he could not therefore get the daughter's whole fortune by marrying her, he reſolved to exert his influence on her mother, to give her to ſome perſon of his chooſing, who ſhould divide it with him, as a recompence for making the match. For this purpoſe, he pitched upon a near relation of his own, who readily gave into the ſcheme, though poſſeſſed himſelf of a fortune that placed him above the neceſſity of ſtooping to ſuch meanneſs. The conſent of the guardian mother, as he foreſaw, was eaſily obtained. She was happy in having ſuch an opportunity of proving her regard for him, as well as of removing her daughter out

of

of his reach, his attention to whom, while his firſt project was in his head, had not eſcaped her jealous notice.

His ſhare of the prize, added to his other gains, made him now a man of conſiderable fortune, and fired him with an ambition of making a figure in the ſtate. To accompliſh this, the natural turn of his mind ſuggeſted it to him to marry into ſome family, the intereſt and ſplendour of which might drown the obſcurity of his own original, and aſſiſt his hopes. Nor did he apprehend any oppoſition to this ſcheme, from the ſame quarter that had defeated the former. He had now gotten from her all that ſhe had to give; and the ſame principle which prompted him to be the hired drudge of her looſe deſires, made him find no ſcruple to leave her ſervice, when ſhe was no longer able to pay the wages of it.

Nothing is eaſier than to make matter for diſpute. On her expreſſing her reſentment, with the haughtineſs which ſhe thought the circumſtances of the connection between them gave her a right to aſſume, as ſhe had on many occaſions before, at ſomething he had done with a deſign to provoke her, his *ſenſibility* took fire; and, in juſt indignation at treatment ſo improper for *a man of honour* to ſubmit to, he bound himſelf by the moſt dreadful imprecations, to ſhake off ſo intolerable a yoke for ever, and ſo flung out of her preſence.

Her ſurprize at a behaviour ſo different from what he had ever ſhown before, ſuſpended her reſentment, and ſhe waited with impatience for a repetition of the blandiſhments with which he had been accuſtomed to ſooth her anger. But what was her aſtoniſhment to find, that, inſtead of making any advances of the kind, he had actu-

ally withdrawn himſelf from her houſe. This alarmed her. In the arrogance of her former ſuperiority, the loſs of which ſhe was not yet ſenſible of, ſhe ſent him a peremptory ſummons, to attend her directly. But her commands had now loſt their weight, and ſhe received a refuſal, the more cutting for being couched in cool, equivocal politeneſs. This drew on him an epiſtolary torrent of upbraidings, expoſtulations, and, at laſt, of the moſt tender intreaties; but all were equally ineffectual. He pleaded his raſh vow, lamented the cruel obligation of it; and, as ſhe began to be ſoftened by this addreſs, hinted at a ſenſe of religion, and even diſtantly recommended it to her, as the beſt conſolation, under the croſſes and afflictions of life.

Such ſentiments from him, could mean nothing but ſneering inſult. In that light ſhe took them. However, as the nature of the affair made it improper for her to open her mind too explicitly, ſhe reſolved to play his own game back upon him, and affect to be convinced by arguments, of which ſhe hoped to take advantage at a proper time, though in a manner very different from his intention in applying them.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

Continued. He begins his ſcheme ſucceſsfully, by ſtealing a marriage. His late KEEPER *makes an artful demand of all the preſents ſhe had given him, which he anſwers as artfully. He advances in his ſcheme, by ſteps exactly in his character, and gets into favour with a great perſon.* CHRYSAL *makes ſome remarks on the origin of the affections of the human mind, and the different manner of breeding men and horſes, with the conſequence.*

WHILE ſhe was pleaſing herſelf with this thought, he had carried the moſt difficult part of his ſcheme into execution. The paſſion for play, which marks the character of the preſent age, though it really counteracts every ſocial virtue, is yet the means of aſſociating all kinds and ranks of people, who have, or even appear to have, money to play for. At meetings for this purpoſe, he had found means to make an acquaintance with a nobleman, who was ſo pleaſed with his converſation, ſtudied deſignedly to pleaſe him, that he admitted him to an intimacy in his family, which he knew ſo well how to improve with one of his daughters, that, in deſpite of the diſparity of age and rank, he ſoon prevailed upon her to crown his hopes by a private marriage, as the conſent of her family could not be expected.

As the immediate fortune of the lady could not be thought an object of mercenary purſuit, when the firſt emotions of reſentment gave place to reflection, his plea of paſſion was admitted as an excuſe, for this violation of the ſacred laws of hoſpitality;

pitality; and his wife's father unknowingly completed his design, by exerting all his interest, which was very great, to advance him in the state.

The secrecy with which it had been necessary for him to conduct this affair, and the rapidity of his success, prevented his late mistress from making any attempt to defeat it. As soon, however, as she recovered from the first stroke of her astonishment at the news of his marriage, she proceeded to put her scheme in execution. Accordingly, she sent him compliments of congratulation on this happy fruit of his conversion, exhorting him to persevere in it, and professed her resolution to imitate his example, and dedicate the remainder of her days to the duties of virtue and religion; as a proof of which, she proposed to begin by restoring to her injured daughter as much as possible of the fortune, which the confidence of her husband had left in her power, and she had unhappily lavished, in pursuits, to the criminal nature of which he had opened her eyes.

As all that was not dissipated beyond recovery, was what she had given to him, and her restoring it therefore must depend on his making a restitution to her first, he was not a moment at a loss for the drift of this extraordinary instance of penitence, nor how to treat the account of it. He immediately returned her an answer, congratulating her, in his turn, with sincerity equal to her own, on her pious resolutions, the intention of which, he said, would make amends for the impossibility of carrying them into execution, any farther than by stinting herself to the indispensible necessaries of life, and laying up the rest of her large income to supply the place of the sums she had expended.

Such

Such an anſwer neceſſarily drew on an explanation, and of courſe a demand of the ſeveral preſents ſhe had made him in the courſe of their dalliance, and knew he had laid up, as he lived at her expence all the time. This was no more than he expected. He replied therefore, without being in the leaſt diſconcerted, that he looked upon every thing he had received from her not as preſents, but payment for the time he had devoted to attending upon her; and, for that reaſon, thought it inconſiſtent with that regard for juſtice, which is inſeparable from true piety, for her to demand ſuch a reſtitution, eſpecially as ſhe muſt be ſenſible that he could not now make it without doing wrong to his wife, who had an undoubted property in every thing that belonged to him; and concluded with deſiring, that a correſpondence which might be miſunderſtood, and ſo diſturb his connubial happineſs, might be dropped between them.

This ſufficiently explained the motives of his conduct, and the deſpicable ſituation which ſhe had brought herſelf to. However, ſhe was obliged to acquieſce with the beſt grace ſhe could, without even the poor ſatisfaction of revenge; for he had taken care to inſert in every paragraph of his letters ſuch anecdotes of the connection that had been between them, that it was impoſſible for her to ſhow them in order to expoſe him, without expoſing herſelf at the ſame time to the contempt and deteſtation of the world. From this time, therefore, all intercourſe beyond that of common civility was broken off between them; though ſome conſequences of their former connection, which happened even after her death, make one of

of the moſt ſtriking parts of his ſtory, as ſhall be obſerved in the proper place.

The firſt eſſays of a man's diſpoſition, indicate the rule by which his whole life will be conducted. The intereſt of the family into which he had thus ſtolen, had no ſooner raiſed him to ſome degree of power, than he aſpired to the higheſt; to attain which, he reſolved to purſue a method exactly in his character. This was, to ingratiate himſelf, he regarded not by what means, with one of the firſt perſonages in the ſtate, whoſe intereſt he meant to make uſe of, as long as it could ſerve him, and then fly in his face, to ſhow his independence. Nature had never endowed a man with qualifications fitter for ſuch a purpoſe. He was every thing to every man. The gay were ſtruck with his wit, the grave with his ſolidity, while an appearance of candor and ſincerity, that lulled ſuſpicion to ſleep, won the confidence of all with whom he converſed; all which powers of pleaſure were, by a ſervility of diſpoſition, derived perhaps from a ſervile birth, proſtituted to the humour of thoſe whom he deſired to pleaſe, however contrary to his own.

I ſee your curioſity at my ſaying, that *the ſervility of his diſpoſition might perhaps be derived from a ſervile birth.* You want to have the origin of the affections of the human ſoul explained, whether they are imprinted on it at its firſt emanation from the ſource of all exiſtence, or received by traduction from the immediate parents of the body, or only cauſed by the caſual operation of external objects. But this, as I have ſaid in other caſes, is a difficulty that I am not at liberty to ſolve, as the queſtion is not yet determined by the learned, though much ingenious reaſoning has been

been diſplayed on every ſide of it. This only I ſhall ſay, that the practice of mankind ſeems to contradict the ſecond of theſe opinions, who ſhow no regard to the diſpoſitions of thoſe on whom they propagate their own ſpecies, though they trace back the pedigree of a dog, or an horſe, for many generations, for fear of any fault in the breed; the reaſon, you may perhaps imagine, why the *brutes bred with ſuch care, are found ſo much ſeldomer to degenerate than the offſpring of the greateſt men.*

CHAP. III.

Continued. He practiſes a ſucceſsful method for gaining the confidence of his new patron, which he turns to good account. Hiſtory of the lover who ſucceeded him in the good graces of his late KEEPER. *He ſtrives to prevent his taking advantage of his influence over her; and finding he fails in that, fools him into diſtreſs, which brings his life in his power. He ſlights many motives which might have had weight with others, and takes advantage of the opportunity to get rid of him, and all farther trouble about him. He continues to dupe him till the laſt moment, when his eyes are opened, and all comes out.*

AS ſoon as he had inſinuated himſelf into the pleaſurable liking of his deſigned patron, by an unwearied exertion of all his powers of pleaſing, he directly proceeded, with the niceſt art, to improve that liking into an important confidence. He watched his every action, word, and look,

look, till he diſcovered the peculiar turn of his mind, to which he accommodated his own ſo implicitly, that the very faculties of his ſoul ſeemed to move only by the other's will.

They who are above deceit themſelves, ſuſpect it not in others. That ſelf-love which is inſeparable from humanity, was eaſily impoſed upon by ſuch art. His patron liked himſelf in him, and inſenſibly came to think all reſerve unneceſſary with one whoſe ſoul appeared to be only the ſhadow of his own. This ſoon gave him real conſequence, as the numbers whom intereſt or inclination attached to his patron, found it neceſſary to take the lead from him, and enabled him to graſp at every opportunity of engroſſing power and acquiring wealth, to ſupply thoſe pleaſures which he had quitted only from neceſſity, and returned to again the moment he had the means of obtaining them.

But all this torrent of ſucceſs was not able to divert his attention for a moment from the ſmalleſt matter in which his avarice was concerned; as he gave the ſtrongeſt proof in the following affair, to explain which, I muſt look back to the woman, whoſe laviſh fondneſs had raiſed his fortune, as it happened in conſequence of his connection with her, though ſome conſiderable time after her death.

It is obſerved, that habitual indulgence continues the paſſions proper to youth, after the fire that firſt ſupplied them is exhauſted, and the end for which they were implanted by nature become impoſſible.

Old as this woman was when our hero deſerted her, and to appearance as incapable of feeling as raiſing deſire, ſhe had ſo long accuſtomed herſelf to the gratification of every ſenſual appetite, that

that ſhe could not bear to live without a lover. The difficulty was, how to fix upon a proper object: for as intereſt was her only attraction, the firſt advances muſt neceſſarily come from her; and then, her prodigality to her laſt, had put it out of her power to make it worth the while of ſuch another as ſhe might like to ſupply his place. Precluded thus from much delicacy in her choice, neceſſity directed her to one of her own domeſtics, ſomething in whoſe circumſtances pointed him out more particularly to her notice.

There is not a more deſpicable inſtance of vanity, than being aſhamed of the connections of nature becauſe of poverty, when that poverty is not the effect of vice. A far diſtant female relation had, from this vanity, bequeathed to her a very conſiderable fortune, to which this man ſhould have been heir, had not the lowneſs of his condition, a motive ſufficient to have influenced a generous heart in his favour, made her think it would be a diſgrace to her to be ſucceeded by him; for which reaſon, ſhe wantonly deprived him of the inheritance of his anceſtors, to give it to one who did not want it. Diſpirited by ſuch unnatural injuſtice, for which the law afforded no redreſs, he was no longer able to purſue the induſtry that had hitherto been his ſupport, and ſunk into ſuch diſtreſs, that his deſpair made him at length throw himſelf at the feet of her who enjoyed his ſpoils, to beg relief.

This happened critically at the time when her inclinations for a new lover began to get the better of her grief for the loſs of the laſt. Softened by what ſhe had herſelf ſo lately felt, ſhe pitied his diſtreſs; and as all the tenderer paſſions are allied, that pity was ſoon warmed into ſuch love

as ſhe was capable of feeling. Accordingly, as ſhe had taken him into her family, on his firſt application, ſhe now entruſted him with the management of her affairs, to give colour for the farther intimacy ſhe had in view. The conſequence was natural. He readily took hints too plain to be overlooked; and ſhe kept up *his aſſiduity in her ſervice*, by ſome preſents in hand, and grants of more, charged moſt of them indeed on the inheritance of his anceſtors, which ſhe had ſettled upon his predeceſſor in her favour after her death; till when, they were not to take place, or be diſcovered, to avoid his reproaches, as well as thoſe of her daughter and her huſband, for ſuch a repetition of her former follies, and becauſe ſhe did not chooſe to ſtraiten her own circumſtances, by the immediate payment of them. But theſe wages of vice, however welcome in his preſent indigence, proved fatal to him in the end.

The hero of my tale, who ſaw the riſe of this new favourite, and knew from experience on what it muſt be founded, though ſhe affected to attribute her notice of him to gratitude to his relation, and retributory juſtice to himſelf, gave him a genteel and profitable employment under one of the many which he himſelf enjoyed in the ſtate, profeſſedly in compliment to her, but really to attach him to his own intereſt, and prevent his exerting his influence on her to obtain ſuch grants as before-mentioned; for the turn of his own mind made him ſuſpect every thing that was poſſible; and ſuch is the partiality of man to himſelf, that he who has been ungrateful to all mankind, will yet expect gratitude from others.

Proud of this preferment, which raiſed his rank in life, and depending on the profeſſions of friendſhip

friendſhip and promiſes which his new friend liberally made him, he thought proper, at her death, not only not to claim her grants for the preſent, to avoid breaking with him, as he knew muſt be the conſequence, but alſo to give up to him a particular gift, part of his own alienated inheritance which he had received publicly from her *as a reward for his ſervices*, and truſt to his honour for an equivalent return. But that return, when at length it was made, was as far from being equivalent, as his promiſes were from performances; nothing being more contrary to his intentions, than to enable him to ſupport his claims to thoſe grants, of which he had gotten notice, and judged from his own heart the reaſon of their being concealed. He continued therefore to feed him with promiſes, which led his vanity into expence, and encouraged him to embark in ſchemes that he had not a fund to execute, till he fell into diſtreſſes, to extricate himſelf from which, he had recourſe to means, that laid his life at the mercy of this his ſuppoſed friend.

There are ſome crimes, the conſequences of which are ſo dangerous, that no puniſhment can be too ſevere to deter from them. One of the worſt of theſe is imitating a man's *ſignature*, with a deſign to deceive. It perpetuates the violation of truth, undermines the ſecurity of innocence, and breaks that confidence which is indiſpenſibly neceſſary to carry on the concerns of life. But, though no circumſtances can, in a legal ſenſe, extenuate the heinouſneſs of this crime, there were ſome, in this particular inſtance, which would have deterred any other man from the proſecution of it. It had been committed, not with an intention of doing injuſtice to him or any other, but to

remedy for a time his injuſtice, by raiſing apparently the value of the return he had made for the gift of their common benefactreſs, as I have before obſerved, nearer to an equality with it, in order to procure preſent relief from diſtreſs, of which he had been, in ſo many ſenſes, the cauſe.

But all theſe conſiderations were of no weight with him, when put in competition with the conveniency of getting rid of one whom he doubly hated for being privy to his iniquities, and interfering with his intereſt. He heſitated not a moment, therefore, to make uſe of an opportunity, offered beyond his hopes, and ſacrifice him, under the ſpecious appearance of paying obedience to the laws.

In this it was neceſſary for him to act with the deepeſt diſſimulation, to accompliſh his deſign in its full extent. But this was no difficulty to him. He profeſſed pity for his misfortunes; and, while he corrupted all in whom the wretch placed confidence, to betray him, he managed ſo as to ſeem to be compelled by law to appear againſt him, though he might with the greateſt eaſe have avoided it, and buried the whole in ſilence. Nor did he ſtop here. His malice ſeemed to purſue him even beyond the grave; for, inſtead of permitting him to prepare in peace for the approach of fate, he buoyed him up with hopes of a pardon, to earn which, the deluded victim ſubſcribed to every thing dictated to him, to blacken his own character, and make void the grants which he had purchaſed at ſo dear a rate; and in this infatuation he was kept to the laſt moment, to prevent his recanting; for which purpoſe, his neareſt friends, and all who might have undeceived him,

and

and adminiſtered comfort to his diſtreſs in the hour of anguiſh, were barred admittance to him.

But his eyes were opened on the verge of life; and, in that awful moment, when truth only is ſpoken, he revoked every thing he had been thus drawn in to ſay, and aſſerted the validity of the claims which were the cauſe of his ruin; ſo that the whole ſcheme, laboured with ſuch deep damnation to deceive the world, was defeated.

I ſee the horror with which you are affected at ſuch a ſcene, and ſhall therefore cloſe it with obſerving, that though he was permitted to perpetrate his crimes, divine juſtice prevented his reaping the fruits he propoſed from them; as, beſide the immediate price of his blood, it coſt him more than he earned by this complicated guilt to ſtop the cries of the widow and orphan, and bribe venal defamation to ſilence, when it was too late, and the myſtery of his wickedneſs was made known to the world.

CHAP. IV.

Continued. A view of his political character introduces a maxim not ſufficiently attended to. He fails in a great ſtroke, and makes ſo many wrong ones, that he is kicked out of power, and forced to be content with profit, which he purſues through thick and thin. An unhappy event gives him an opportunity of ſhewing his ingratitude to his late patron, on the merit of which he riſes to higher power than ever, which he wiſely exerts behind the curtain, and leaves HIS TOOLS *to bear the blame. An account of the juſt fruits of ſo much ſucceſs concludes his ſtory.*

YOU have hitherto ſeen him only in private

life: I'll now give you a glimpſe of his political character, which will convince you of a truth, for obvious reaſons not ſufficiently attended to, which is, that the ruling principles of the heart influence the actions in all capacities; and therefore that *it is impoſſible for a bad man to be a good miniſter.*

The power to which the confidence of his patron raiſed him, was ſuch as might have enabled him to effect either much good, or evil, had he known how to have uſed it to the beſt advantage. But his eagerneſs in the purſuit of his own views, put him off his uſual guard, and diſcovered his principles before it was too late to oppoſe them.

The moſt exalted minds are not exempted from human weakneſſes. That of his patron was a thirſt of power, though without a thought of uſing it, in any improper manner. Some late ſervices, of the higheſt importance, which he had performed to the ſtate, ſuggeſted to our hero a ſcheme for rivetting his intereſt with him ſtill ſtronger, by procuring him a power which he knew would centre really in himſelf. Accordingly, he exerted all his abilities and influence to wreſt from the ſovereign an eſſential part of the incommunicable power of the crown, and veſt it in him.

Such an attempt inſtantly gave the alarm to every real friend, not only of the government, but alſo of him, in whoſe favour it was profeſſed to be made; who, though they harboured no fear of him, did not dare to offer ſuch an affront to their ſovereign, and give a wound to the political conſtitution of their country, which might be of moſt dangerous conſequence in leſs ſafe hands. The deſign therefore was defeated; and inſtead of ſerving

ving his patron, only inſtilled doubts of him into thoſe who were not acquainted with the uprightneſs of his heart.

Though the intereſt of his patron continued to ſupport him for a conſiderable time after this, his whole conduct was ſuch a ſeries of blunders, (many of them ſo groſs, that it was doing violence to probability to impute them to ignorance) that at length *the voice of the people was raiſed againſt him*, and he was obliged to give up all pretenſions to power, and ſit down with an employment of great, but mere profit, which all his own ſolicitations, though urged with the abject importunity of a common beggar, even to ſhedding tears, and imploring compaſſion for his wife and family, all he had hitherto acquired having been ſquandered, as faſt as it came, on his pleaſures, would not have procured for him, had not his patron ſanguinely eſpouſed his intereſt, even to the injury of his own, though, on a diſcovery of his principles and private character, now too notorious to be concealed, he rejected him from his eſteem, and refuſed to give any farther countenance to his ambition.

From this time he applied every power of his ſoul to amaſs wealth, which he had too many opportunities of doing in his preſent employment, the moſt iniquitous of which he never failed to improve to ſtill greater iniquity, regardleſs of public reproach, and the diſtreſs of myriads, ſuffering under his injuſtice, whoſe cries and imprecations aſcended hourly to heaven againſt him.

Riches give conſequence, eſpecially with thoſe who ſacrifice every thing to luxury. Though he had no public power, his perſonal influence over individuals

dividuals in a ſhort time became greater than ever, as he too ſoon had an opportunity of proving.

One of thoſe events, which ſhew the vanity of all human deſigns, however wiſely conducted and glorious in their end, threw the government into other hands. New men always adopt new meaſures, if only from an affectation of appearing wiſer than their predeceſſors. In this change his late patron loſt all influence, except that which *virtue eſtabliſhes in the hearts of the virtuous*. This was an opportunity for ſhaking off the weight of obligation, not to be miſſed by one of our hero's turn. He not only deſerted him directly in the baſeſt manner, but alſo, to ingratiate himſelf with the preſent powers, fathered upon him the fictions of his own brain, under the appearance of betraying his ſecrets, and made a merit of aggravating his ingratitude and perfidy, by open inſults, in hope of provoking him to ſome unguarded act or expreſſion of reſentment, which might give advantage againſt him, *by the common trick, of applying to the maſter what is meant to the ſervant*. But, for once, all his art failed. Confident in conſcious innocence and merit, he diſdained to give weight to ſuch baſe machinations, by taking notice of them; and receiving this ingratitude as a puniſhment for having placed his eſteem ſo unworthily, looked down upon him with indignant contempt, nor was ever heard to honour his name with utterance.

Such a proof of his ſincerity gained our hero the confidence of his new friends, to whoſe tottering power his perſonal intereſt was found a neceſſary ſupport. But he lent not that ſupport but on his own terms. Cooled by experience, he had learned that the name of power is always purſued by envy and ambition. He therefore wiſely gratified

tified the vanity of others with the dangerous ſhadow, while he reſerved the ſubſtance to himſelf, dictating in ſafety, becauſe in ſecret, all the meaſures, for any miſtake in which they were anſwerable.

In this ſituation you ſee him now. But ſuch a ſeries of ſucceſs has been far from procuring him the happineſs propoſed in the purſuit. Recollection of the means, imbitters the end. The ingratitude and perfidy of one, whom he had placed his whole confidence in, and bound to him by the higheſt obligations, upbraid him continually with his own baſeneſs to his patron, and make him afraid to place truſt in any other; ſo that he lives in a ſtate of conſtant ſuſpicion and dread of all mankind, deſtitute of that friendly confidence, which is the cement of ſociety, the comfort and ſupport of life.

Nor is this the only wound that rankles in his breaſt: the unhappy victim of his avarice, murdered under the formalities of law, is never abſent from his thoughts a moment. Conjured up by conſcience, his ſpectre haunts his dreams. He *ſees* him *in the dark*; he *hears* him *in the deepeſt ſilence*: nor can the loud laugh of mirth and riot drown his louder voice in the midſt of company. Hence that gloom which you ſee hang upon his brow; that conſciouſneſs of guilt, which gives a caſt of horror to his very ſmiles.

Conſider now the ſtory of this man; and own, with reverence and awe, that *vice never wants an avenger*; that *wickedneſs is its own puniſhment*. Who would not rather be the apparent wretch, that wanders homeleſs through the world, fed by the cold hand of common charity, than he, with all his honours, power, and wealth?

The

The characters of the reſt, except him who had been my maſter's competitor for admiſſion into the ſuperior order of the ſociety, are not diſtinguiſhed by any thing to make them worth diſplaying: I ſhall therefore leave them in the obſcurity they deſerve; as I ſhall reſerve his for another place, where ſome new occurrences will ſhew it in a ſtronger light.

CHAP. V.

CHRYSAL leaves the convent. His maſter proceeds in character. He practiſes a new manner of courtſhip; and ſignalizes his talent for intrigue, by debauching the daughter of his friend. Her diſtreſs, when too late, gives him ſome ſlight qualms of conſcience; but he ſoon recovers, and goes on in his enterprize.

IT was my fortune to leave this place, in the poſſeſſion of the ſame perſon who had brought me to it. The moment the meeting broke up, he flew to reduce into practice ſome part of the theory which had been ſo well diſcuſſed among them. A perſon of diſtinguiſhed learning and virtue, who had taken great pains, though to little purpoſe, with ſome part of the education of his youth, had obſerved of late, that he ſeemed to pay him particular reſpect, and was more frequent than uſual in his viſits at his houſe, where he behaved with a moral decency, very different from his general character.

The good man ſaw this with real pleaſure; and, attributing it to the influence of his own converſation,

ſation, as vanity will find its way into the beſt hearts, gave him all the encouragement he could to come, in hope of working a thorough reformation in him. But he was deceived in that hope, and found, when too late, that he had cheriſhed a viper in his boſom, to ſting his heart.

Euſebius (that was this perſon's name) had an only daughter, on whoſe education he had exerted the tendereſt care. She was now in that dangerous time of life, when ripened youth has given all the paſſions their full force, and reaſon not yet acquired ſtrength to rule them. This danger, however, ſeemed leſs threatening to her than it is to moſt of the ſex, nature, which had been moſt liberal to her mind, having denied thoſe charms of face which too often prove a ſnare to the poſſeſſor; and the precepts of her father trained her in ſuch principles of wiſdom and virtue, as ſeemed a ſufficient guard.

Such circumſtances, excluſive of the obligations of honour, not to infringe the laws of hoſpitality, (I add not virtue, for that has long loſt all obligation in matters of this kind), would have prevented any other man from thinking of attempting her: but the pleaſure of ſeducing innocence ſupplied every defect of beauty; and the difficulty of ſuch a conqueſt doubled his ardour in the purſuit, as the triumph would eſtabliſh the fame of his gallantry, which had never yet aſpired beyond a ſervant wench; beſide that the age and profeſſion of her father ſecured him from the danger of perſonal reſentment. Encouraged by all thoſe equally powerful motives, the moment he ſaw her, he marked her out for the proof of his talents for intrigue: how to begin his attack though,

ſo

ſo as to elude her father's vigilance, without alarming her virtue, was the queſtion.

But he was not long at a loſs. Difficulties, which appear inſurmountable to wiſdom, are eaſily conquered by cunning, (and with this he was plentifully ſtored), becauſe it will make uſe of means, which the other holds in abhorrence. In purſuance therefore of a plan, which he ſoon formed, he cultivated the acquaintance of *Euſebius* with the greateſt aſſiduity, and, in all his viſits to his houſe, turned his converſation entirely upon points of ſpeculative knowledge, in which he profeſſed the moſt earneſt deſire of information. *Euſebius* took the bait. As theſe were the uſual topics of diſcourſe between him and his daughter, he was pleaſed at her being preſent, whenever my maſter was with him, both for her information, and to give her an opportunity of diſplaying the advantages ſhe had received from his care; for which purpoſe, he often led her and my maſter into arguments, to which he liſtened with the higheſt delight, as ſhe always had the better in them. Nor was ſhe leſs pleaſed on ſuch occaſions than her father. The modeſt deference, which my maſter conſtantly paid to her judgment, was ſo flattering to her conſciouſneſs of ſuperiority, that ſhe ſoon beceme fond of his company, at the ſame time that the artfulneſs of his addreſs to her, for he never ſhowed any other notice of her ſex, than by a moſt guarded delicacy in his expreſſions, deceived the watchful care of *Euſebius* ſo effectually, that he never ſcrupled to leave his two pupils (as he fondly affected to call them) alone together, when any buſineſs demanded his attendance elſewhere.

As

As this was what my maſter had all along aimed at, it may be ſuppoſed he did not neglect to improve opportunities ſo favourable to his wiſhes. He always turned his converſation directly to ſuch ſubjects as were moſt likely to inflame the paſſions, on the gratification of which he expatiated with a particular warmth and luxuriancy of imagination, but in terms ſo well wrapped up, as to conceal the poiſon they conveyed. The effect ſoon anſwered his deſign. Subjects, propoſed merely as points of ſpeculation, gave her no alarm: and, when ſuch thoughts are once ſuggeſted, nature will lead them to her own ends. Her paſſions had been ſmothered, not extinguiſhed, and were the readier to take fire for ſuch reſtraint. She heard him therefore with pleaſure, and ſlid inſenſibly into danger, the direct mention of which would have ſtruck her with horror.

Matters were in this critical ſituation, when he returned from *the ſociety*. The moment he alighted, he flew to the houſe of *Euſebius*, who unhappily was not at home. The converſation ſoon fell into its late courſe. There are ſome moments, in which nature will bear down all oppoſition. Though ſhe had indulged herſelf in talking on ſuch ſubjects, ſhe meant nothing more. But he was too well verſed in the practice, to let her ſtop at the theory; and one unguarded minute murdered the peace of her future life, and blaſted the fruits of all her father's care.

It is impoſſible to deſcribe what ſhe felt, when paſſion gave place to reaſon, and ſhe became ſenſible of what had paſſed. Even he, hackneyed as he was in the ways of wickedneſs, could not ſtand it. He left her precipitately, and, for the firſt time, felt ſomething like remorſe. But theſe

qualms laſted not long. His deſires were rather raiſed than ſatisfied; beſide that, to have ſtopped here, without making his ſucceſs public, would have diſappointed perhaps the principal pleaſure he had in view. He reſolved therefore to ſeduce her from her father's houſe, that all the world might be witneſſes of his triumph.

For this purpoſe, he went to her the next morning, at a time when he knew *Euſebius* was uſually engaged abroad. On enquiring for her, he was anſwered that ſhe was not well, and was turning about to go away, when her maid, who, from her own experience, had ſuſpected ſomething of the cauſe of her miſtreſs's illneſs, officiouſly ran to him, and told him ſhe was in her dreſſing-room.

CHAP. VI.

Continued. CHRYSAL's *maſter makes his triumph public, by ſeducing his new miſtreſs away from her father's houſe. The manner in which he impoſed upon them both to effect this, with the conſolation he gave her for ſome natural conſequences of his gallantry. His triumph is completed, by her going upon the town, and her father's breaking his heart.*

HIS intimacy in the family giving him a title to viſit her there, he went directly up, where he found her in a condition that once more ſhook his reſolution, and made him almoſt ſorry for what he had done. She ſat the image of deſpair! ſleep had never cloſed her eyes! ſhe had not changed the diſordered dreſs of the day before; and her face

face was ſo ſwollen with inceſſant weeping, that he could hardly believe it was ſhe.

Her maid withdrawing *conveniently*, as ſoon as he entered, he threw himſelf at her feet, in all the trick of wo, and, imploring her pardon, lamented what had paſſed, (for which he imprecated heaven's vengeance on his own head), in ſuch paſſionate terms, as, amid all her grief, alarmed her fear of his being overheard, for hitherto the ſecret was their own.

The firſt hint of this cured him of his penitence, and ſuggeſted to him how to proceed. He perſiſted in all the extravagance of grief, and acted his part ſo well, that, forgetting her own diſtreſs for a moment, ſhe was inſenſibly led to adminiſter conſolation to him. This was what he wanted. He at length ſeemed to be comforted by her arguments, which he gradually improved ſo far, as to glance at a continuance of the guilty commerce, which he preſſed for, by the moſt rapturous profeſſions of love, and the ſtrongeſt vows of unalterable conſtancy and truth.

This was an attack which ſhe was no way prepared for: her heart was ſoftened by grief; and ſhame for what was paſt precluded her arguments againſt a repetition. She heſitated however, ſilenced, not convinced, till the voice of her father turned the ſcale. "O! ſave me from his ſight! "(exclaimed ſhe, wringing her hands), ſave me "from his ſight! I'll go to death, to any thing, "rather than meet his eye."

"Nor ſhall you meet it, (anſwered my maſter, "claſping her in his arms, and kiſſing away the "tears that trickled down her cheeks), I'll go this "inſtant, and take him home with me, as upon "buſineſs, where I'll find means to detain him,

" while you pack up ſome immediate neceſſaries,
" and prepare to meet my *faithful valet de chambre*,
" who ſhall wait with a coach at the end of next
" ſtreet, and conduct you to my country-houſe,
" whither I'll follow you on the wings of love,
" and drown every diſagreeable thought in rap-
" ture."

He did not give her time to anſwer, but ruſhed directly out of the room, and meeting her *ready* maid at the door, took his cue from her, who told him ſhe had excuſed her miſtreſs's abſence from ſupper the night before, on a pretence of her being engaged in reading; and ſhe ſaid in the morning, that ſhe had ſat up ſo late ſhe could not riſe to breakfaſt.

Satisfied with theſe excuſes, becauſe he ſuſpected nothing elſe, *Euſebius*, on hearing my maſter was above, was coming up to pay his compliments to him, when he met him at the bottom of the ſtairs. " I muſt give up arguing with one (ſaid
" my maſter ſmiling, as he went forward into the
" parlour, whither he knew *Euſebius* would ne-
" ceſſarily attend him), who ſits up ſtudying all
" night. She has turned me out on a pretence
" of dreſſing; but I know it is to go back to the
" book at which I caught her; ſo that I ſhall
" make but a poor figure in the evening, if you
" don't help me out. However, I'll try: I am not
" aſhamed to yield to her. But come; I called
" ſo early to beg your company at my houſe,
" where I have ſomething that will pleaſe you to
" conſult upon. I ſhan't keep you long, as I am
" obliged to go out before dinner."

To this *Euſebius* readily aſſented; and my maſter, putting his hand under his arm, led him away, proud of ſuch familiarity with a perſon of his

his rank, as unſuſpecting as a victim to the altar. As ſoon as he got home, he gave the neceſſary inſtructions to his *truſty Valet de Chambre*, and then returning to *Euſebius*, amuſed him with imaginary ſchemes of reformation and œconomy in his family, and improvements in his houſe, till the return of his emiſſary let him know all was over. He then diſmiſſed *Euſebius* with a ſmile of triumph, who went home, happy in his mind at the prudence and virtue of his converſation, the effects, as he fondly imagined, of his own care and example; the laſt time his mind ever knew happineſs.

The moment he was gone, my maſter haſted after the deluded fugitive, whom he overtook juſt as ſhe alighted at his houſe, the ſervants of which were too well accuſtomed to ſuch things, to be ſurpriſed at the ſight of a new face. The manner of their meeting may be eaſily conceived. On his ſide, all was joy and triumph; on her's, guilty confuſion, ſhame and fear. However, repetition, though the higheſt aggravation of a crime, is yet leſs terrifying than the firſt commiſſion; beſide, ſhe had now gone too far, to ſtop at any thing.

Three days he ſtaid with her, every moment of which was embittered to her by reflection, and ſeemed tedious to him from ſatiety and impatience to make his triumph known, and then left her on a pretence of buſineſs, with vows of immediate return; and going back to *London*, repaired directly to the tavern, where he had by letter appointed to meet all his aſſociates, to whom he related the whole affair in ſuch terms of exultation as raiſed their envy, not ſo much at his poſſeſſion of her, as the glory of ſuch a triumph.

I ſee your anxiety to know the fate of the unhappy *Euſebius*, and his more unhappy daughter. Though I ſaw them no more myſelf, I had too many opportunities of hearing their ſtory, the ſum of which is this. *Euſebius*, on his return home from my maſter, found a note from his daughter, bidding him farewel for ever, and deſiring he would not take the trouble of making any enquiry after her, as ſhe was unworthy of his care. The diſtraction evident in the ſtyle and purport of this note, too plainly ſhewed her ruin. This was an attack his heart was not proof againſt. He ſunk down inſtantly in a ſwoon, in which he eſcaped ſome hours of miſery before he recovered his ſenſes.

The firſt exertion of his reaſon, was to make enquiry after his daughter; but no one could give him any information, her maid, who conducted, having accompanied her flight. He then flew to his friend, my maſter, for counſel and aſſiſtance; for the goodneſs of his own heart would neither let him ſuſpect him, nor deſert her in the ruin into which ſhe had fallen; but he was told at his houſe, that a certain nobleman of his acquaintance had called upon him, the moment he left him, and taken him into the country for a few days. Every enquiry he could make after his daughter was equally unſucceſsful, till my maſter's exultation made the whole affair public. This, if poſſible, gave freſh poignancy to his grief. He did not, however, deſert the wretched victim of ſuch villany, but wrote to her directly to return to him, and hide her ſhame from the world in his boſom: but deſpair made her reject his offer.

As for her, a few days, in which my maſter left her to the comfort of her own reflections, diſcovered

covered to her that his love had been injurious to her health, as well as to her peace of mind. What ſhe felt at this diſcovery, may eaſily be conceived. She wrote to him in the agony of her ſoul to reproach ſuch manifold baſeneſs; but, inſtead of an anſwer of excuſe or conſolation, received only a quack-doctor's advertiſement, and a bank note for a trifling ſum incloſed in a blank cover. The ſame poſt brought her her father's offer of forgiveneſs and reception. The contraſt was more than ſhe could bear. She hurried back to town, where deſpair prompting her to revenge her folly on herſelf by ſtill deeper ruin, ſhe plunged into all the horrors of a life of common proſtitution.

This filled the meaſure of her father's wo. He had no redreſs to expect in this world; and therefore, reſigning the puniſhment of his wrongs to the great Avenger, indulged his grief in ſilence, till, in a few months, it brought his grey hairs to the grave.

CHAP. VII.

"CHRYSAL's *maſter pays his court to a great perſon, who ſeems not much to reliſh his humour, and expreſſes ſome unfaſhionable ſentiments concerning polite pleaſures. In the courſe of a regular progreſſion,* CHRYSAL *comes into the poſſeſſion of a beau.*" *Hiſtory of a beau, with a journal of his manner of life for one day.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice in a common way, for that of* A LADY OF FASHION.

"THE next morning after my maſter's return to *London*, he went to pay his court to

" to the Heir of the Crown, who was then at " one of his country ſeats. Some public occaſion " had brought a concourſe more than uſual, in " thoſe retirements, to pay their duty to the " Prince that morning. As my maſter was one " of the laſt who came, as ſoon as his devoirs " were ended, ſome of the company accidentally " aſked him what had kept him ſo late? on which, " with an eaſy air of pleaſantry, he anſwered a- " loud, that he had been detained by a very " whimſical affair." " A certain nobleman" (ſaid he) " went into company laſt night ſo *immenſely* " drunk, that having ſat down to play, and loſt " five thouſand pound, he quite forgot it this " morning, and refuſed to pay the money till " ſome *perſon of honour*, who was unconcerned in " the matter, ſhould vouch his having loſt it fair- " ly; on which it was referred to me, and ſorry " I am that I was qualified to give it againſt " him."

" How, my lord! by being a perſon of ho- " nour!" (ſays the gentleman ſpoke to).——

" No!" (replied my maſter, with a ſignificant ſmile) " not ſo neither! but by being unconcern- " ed in winning it."——And then turning ſhort to another, " But have you heard the news, my " lord?" (ſaid he) " Mr. ——— caught his " wife yeſterday taking a ſerious walk in *Kenſing-* " *ton* gardens with the gentleman whom we all " know he forbade her keeping company with ſome " time ago."——

" A ſmile of general approbation encouraged " him ſo much, that he concluded with ſaying, " he wiſhed he had himſelf been the happy de- " linquent ſo taken, as he doubted not but the

" graveſt

"graveſt biſhop on the bench would, were he to "ſpeak his mind honeſtly."

"The Prince had heard him without interrup- "tion; but as ſoon as he had ended, turning to "a nobleman who ſtood near him, There can be "no greater inſult" (ſaid he, with a determined look, and ſolemn accent) "to a perſon, who is ap- "pointed to put the laws of a country in execu- "tion, than for any one to boaſt of a breach of "thoſe laws in his preſence. *For my part, if I "am ever called by Providence to that ſtation, it is "my invariable reſolution, that no man, how exalted "ſoever in rank, who lives in open violation of any "law, human or divine, ſhall ever hold employment "under me, or receive countenance from me.*"

"This rebuke damped my maſter's ſpirits, as "it ſtruck a reverential awe into all preſent. He "hung down his head, and in a few minutes "withdrew quite abaſhed. But he ſoon recovered; "and, to ſilence the jeſts of his companions, and "ſhew that he was not to be brow-beaten out of "his own way, he made one with them to ſpend "the evening at a brothel tavern, where he gave "me to a pimp, who gave me to a whore, who "gave me to a bully, who gave me to a pawn- "broker, who gave me to a beau." *Vol.* II.—*

My new maſter was one of thoſe cyphers in na- ture, who ſeem born only to make up the num- ber of mankind. The poor pittance, which pride of family ſpares from the eldeſt ſon to ſave the reſt from ſtarving, had been juſt enough to pur- chaſe him a commiſſion in the guards, in which he ſignalized his proweſs on the parade, and talk- ed

* As this concluſion of the foregoing character is ſo ſhort, it is inſerted to preſerve the connection, and ſave the reader the trouble of referring.

ed as big, and looked as bluff as the beſt, while his campaigns were confined to *St. James's Park*. But the proſpect of a war changed his note. The irregularities and licentiouſneſs of a military life now ſhocked his delicacy, and he exchanged for half-pay; and retaining only the convenient title of *captain*, reſolved to puſh his fortune in the gentler way of matrimony.

For this purpoſe he directly commenced *beau*, as the fair ſex is ſooneſt caught by the eye, and, when that is pleaſed, ſeldom enquire farther. Accordingly he now ſtudied nothing but faſhions, as all his care was to procure clothes to keep up to them; which the narrowneſs of his circumſtances made it ſo difficult for him to do, that his belly mourned many a time for the finery of his back. Nor was that his only difficulty. The very expence of going into company to diſplay that finery, was often as diſtreſſing to him as to procure it.

It was on an occaſion of this kind that I came into his poſſeſſion. His ſhowy appearance, together with his *being one whom every body knew*, making him a convenient *faggot* to fill up thoſe *muſters*, the only end of which is to ſhew the conſequence of the *commanding officer* by the numbers ſhe can croud together, there was hardly a genteel *route* in town to which he was not invited. Such a diſtinction was the height of his ambition: accordingly, having received a *card* to ſummon him to one the next evening, he was not able to reſiſt the temptation of ſo favourable an opportunity of ſhewing himſelf to the ladies, though his finances were ſo low, that he had no other way to defray the expence of his chair, but by applying to ſuch a place as this, *where diſtreſs is preyed upon by profeſſion, and really aggravated under the deceitful appearance*

pearance of momentary relief; an expedient indeed to which he was well accuſtomed. As ſoon as it was dark, therefore, he came wrapped up in a horſeman's coat, and pulling a laced waiſtcoat out of his boſom, mortgaged it for three guineas, *one of which I was.*

When this weighty tranſaction was concluded, he returned home, and, changing his dreſs, repaired to a coffee-houſe at the court end of the town, where he talked over the news of the day with all the ſignificant airs and importance of *one in the ſecret*, confirming every word he ſaid with the authority of *his couſin*, this lord, or *his friend*, that duke, till he *careleſsly outſtayed all his engagements for ſupper*, when a *Welſh rabbit* and three pennyworth of punch made him amends for the want of a dinner, and he went home ſatisfied.

Well as I was by this time acquainted with the inconſiſtencies of human life, I could not help being ſtruck with the contradiction between the external appearance and domeſtic œconomy of my new maſter. The former was in all the elegance of taſte and affluence, while the latter was regulated by the ſtricteſt parſimony that nature could ſupport. He lodged in an houſe which opened into a genteel ſtreet, and had a back door into a blind alley, that ſerved him whenever he choſe to go out or come in *incog*. Here, one room up three pair of ſtairs (but the name of the ſtreet overbalanced that and every other inconvenience) ſerved him for every purpoſe of life, in moſt of which he miniſtered to himſelf, undiſturbed by the company of any one but his hairdreſſer, laundreſs, and taylor, at their appointed times. To all others he was conſtantly denied by the people of the houſe, who received all meſ-

ſages

ſages for him, and returned proper anſwers. But the manner of his life will be beſt deſcribed by the hiſtory of the one day I was in his poſſeſſion, the buſineſs of every day being invariably the ſame.

As he had ſat up late, it was near noon when he aroſe, by which *genteel* indulgence he ſaved coals; for his fire was never lighted till after he was up. He then ſallied out to *breakfaſt*, in the tarniſhed laced frock and his thick-ſoled ſhoes, read the paper in the coffee-houſe, *(too ſoon after breakfaſt to take any thing)*, and then walked a turn in the park till it was time to dreſs for dinner, when he went home, and finding his ſtomach out of order *from his laſt night's debauch* and his *late breakfaſting*, he ſent the maid of the houſe for a baſon of peaſe-ſoup from the cook's ſhop *to ſettle* it; by the time he had taken which, it was too late for him to think of going any where to dine, *though he had ſeveral appointments with people of the firſt faſhion.* When this frugal meal was over, he ſet about the real buſineſs of the day. He took out and bruſhed his beſt clothes, ſet his ſhirt to the fire to air, put on his ſtockings and ſhoes, and then ſitting down to his toilet, on which his waſhes, paints, tooth-powders, and lip-ſalves were all placed in order, had juſt finiſhed his face, when his hair-dreſſer came, one hour under whoſe hands completed him a firſt-rate beau.

When he had contemplated himſelf for ſome time with pride of heart, and practiſed his looks and geſtures at the glaſs, a chair was called, which carried him to a ſcene of equal magnificence and confuſion. From the brilliant appearance of the company, and the eaſe and ſelf-complacency in all their looks, it ſhould have ſeemed that there

was

was not one poor or unhappy perſon among them. But the caſe of my maſter had convinced me what little faith is to be given to appearances; as I alſo found, upon a nearer view, that many of the gayeſt there were in no better condition than he.

Having reconnoitred one another ſufficiently to lay in a fund for remarks, and bandied about the common cant of compliments, the company ſat down to cards, when the looks of many of them ſoon underwent a change. For *prudential reaſons*, my maſter always declined engaging in parties of this nature; but, this night, all his addreſs could not excuſe him. A lady, *whom he had dreſſed at* for a conſiderable time, happening to come late, unluckily *wanted one*, and ſeeing him idle, would take no apology. He complied therefore with the beſt grace he could, and, invoking fortune with more fervency than he had ever prayed to heaven, *cut in*; when chancing *to fall againſt her*, her ſuperior luck or ſkill, aided not a little by his anxiety, ſoon ſtripped him of every ſhilling in his pocket, and ſent him home in a a penſive mood, to ſtudy *ways and means* for raiſing another ſupply; and on this occaſion I followed the ſmiles of fortune, and entered into the ſervice of the winner.

CHAP. VIII.

History of CHRYSAL's *new miſtreſs. She is brought into diſtreſs by her beauty, from which a lucky interview relieves her. The danger of arguing in favour of inclination againſt reaſon. Her friend puts her to ſchool to learn manners, and afterwards marries her. His family ſhew impotent reſentment, at which he is ſo enraged that he makes his will, by which he leaves her his whole fortune; and then dies. An uncommon inſtance of the good-nature of the world.*

THOUGH my late maſter had put the beſt face he could upon the matter, and excuſed his breaking up the party at the end of the firſt *rubber*, on a pretence of being taken ſuddenly ſick, my miſtreſs ſaw through him. "Sick indeed!" (ſaid ſhe, laughing) "hah! hah! hah! poor captain! "I do not doubt but you are, and that at heart! "I ſaw it coming upon you, ever ſince the firſt "deal, when *I held four by honours!* but I don't "wonder at it. A full rubber was too much. "Two guineas and an half are no trifle to ſome "people!"——

Two or three other viſits, which ſhe had to pay that evening, prevented her making a new party: ſhe only ſtaid to tell the ſtory of the captain's ſickneſs to every one ſhe knew in the room, who all joined in the laugh againſt him.

I ſee you are ſhocked at ſuch an inſtance of inſenſiblity; but if you will reflect a moment, you will find you have no reaſon. Though poverty is attended with many real evils, yet when the worſt of them are voluntarily encountered to gratify vanity,

vanity, the pity, otherwiſe due to it, is juſtly turned into contempt; and the efforts uſed to hide it, which are always ſeen through, treated with ridicule and inſult.

The morning after I came into the poſſeſſion of my new miſtreſs, ſhe brought to concluſion an affair of a moſt extraordinary nature, which few women beſide herſelf would have had ſpirit even to undertake. To explain it properly to you, it will be neceſſary to give you a ſhort ſketch of her ſtory.

The gifts of nature are either a bleſſing or a curſe, according to the uſe made of them. My miſtreſs was born in one of the loweſt claſſes of mankind; the obſcurity of her birth though ſeemed to be made amends for, by the endowments of her perſon and mind, which were ſuch as raiſed univerſal admiration, from their firſt infant dawn. But theſe, tempting the licentious ſpoiler, like the beauty of a flower growing in the highway, loſt their advantage, and proved her ruin, for want of proper care.

She had ſcarce paſſed her childhood, when one of thoſe female purveyors for vice, who go about, like their maſter, ſeeking whom they may deſtroy, to the diſgrace, not only of their own ſex, but alſo of human nature, marked her out as proper for her purpoſe. There was no difficulty, either in getting her into her power, or ſeducing her mind. The poverty of her parents made them glad to part with her, without farther inquiry, to any one who promiſed to take care of her, only to be delivered from the expence of her ſupport, as it had prevented their giving her the leaſt education to form her manners, or inſpire her mind with principles of virtue. Such a ſubject was exactly

ſuited for ſo vile an agent to work upon. She took her home; dreſſed her up decently, and teaching her what account to give of herſelf, proſtituted her, while ſhe could make any profit of her, and then turned her adrift upon the world, to live, as well as ſhe could, on the earning of ſin and wretchedneſs.

I muſt not attempt to deſcribe the life of a common proſtitute! it is too horrible! She had run through the loweſt ſcenes of it for ſome time, when fortune one night threw into her way, one of thoſe old debilitated debauchees, who indulge in the ſpeculation, after they are paſt the practice, of vice. Something in her air and manner, as ſhe *picked him up*, ſtruck him. He took her to a tavern, where he was ſtill more pleaſed with her uncommon ſmartneſs and vivacity. "I am cloyed," (ſaid he to himſelf) "with the groſs ignorance of "the women of the town! I hate the impertinent "airs of virtue, which thoſe of better education "give themſelves: I'll therefore unite thoſe qua-"lifications, which ſeparately pleaſe me in both, "in this young creature, who can never offend "me by pretences to virtue, at the ſame time "that the excellence of her underſtanding will "receive, and reward me with the fruits of, the "beſt education."

There was novelty in the whim; and therefore he reſolved to carry it into execution. He took her home with him, and, ſending for the moſt eminent maſters in every part of polite education, put her under their care, and incited their application by moſt liberal promiſes of reward.

Young as ſhe was, and hackneyed in every vicious habit, ſhe had a ſufficient ſenſe of the change in her way of life, not to forfeit the advantage,

vantage, by any miſbehaviour or neglect. On the contrary, ſhe applied herſelf ſo cloſely to every thing taught her, and ſhewed a diſpoſition ſo deſirous of improvement in every ſenſe, that her benefactor, proud of the diſcernment, which could diſcover ſuch talents, under ſo great diſadvantages, became enamoured of the effects of his own benevolence and care. "I have at length found," (would he ſay to himſelf) "what I have hitherto "ſought in vain, a woman that can make me "happy! Her wit and underſtanding will enliven "the hour of heavineſs; while a falſe parade of "virtue will never throw a damp on pleaſantry "and mirth. What though her birth is obſcure! "are we not all deſcended from one common "ſtock? is the blood of a peaſant leſs pure than "that of a prince?——If ſhe has taken a falſe "ſtep, in the weakneſs of her youth, that ſhould "be charged to fate, that led her into temptation "before ſhe had reaſon to reſiſt it!——But all "theſe ſeeming diſadvantages are now turned in "her favour. Her experience in the ways of the "world, will make it impoſſible to deceive her "again. Her conſciouſneſs of the meanneſs of "her own family, will give her a proper ſenſe of "the honour of being admitted into mine, and "ſave me from the intolerable plague of having "her pedigree rung in my ears every hour. Her "youth and luxuriance of conſtitution will alſo "ſupply to our children the defects which too "eager a purſuit of pleaſure may have made in "mine. Let thoſe who are dependent on the "world, regard its cenſure; I am above it, and "will purſue my own happineſs wherever it leads "me."

There is nothing more dangerous, than ſeeking for arguments, in favour of inclination, againſt reaſon. Trifles, light as air, will be admitted as the weightieſt proofs of that which is wiſhed to be proved; and palliatives, barely poſſible, anſwer objections in their nature unanſwerable. He had taken a liking to her; he had taken it into his head to ſecure the gratification of that liking, by marrying her: and a very little arguing with himſelf in this manner ſoon convinced him, not only of the expediency of ſuch a marriage to his happineſs, but alſo of the obligation he was under, of doing that juſtice to her merit, and his own judgment. The conſequence may be eaſily concluded. He married her, as he profeſſed, in obedience to reaſon, rather than to gratify inclination.

But the caſe was very different with the world, which, far from ſeeing the force of his arguments, laughed at him for being taken thus in a ſnare of his own making. His own family in particular beheld her with eyes perhaps not leſs blinded by intereſt, than his were by inclination; and depreciating the merit ſhe really had, repreſented his marriage as the mere effect of vicious dotage.

Nothing is ſo ill-judged as to ſhew impotent reſentment. It only provokes a return, of none effect; and makes a wound incurable, which otherwiſe might have healed of itſelf. Incenſed that they ſhould preſume to cenſure actions, which they could not control, he directly made his will, by which he gave away the inheritance of his anceſtors from his own blood, leaving his whole fortune to his wife, as a teſtimony of his unaltered regard for her, and to ſhew his reſentment to them; ſoon after which, he died.

This

This was more than her moſt ſanguine hopes could ever have riſen to. She was in the prime of life; and poſſeſſed of a fortune to afford her all its pleaſures. Theſe advantages, (and I ſhould add her beauty, which was in the perfection of ripened bloom), naturally attracted a number of admirers of different kinds, and with as different views, who all thought themſelves ſure of her, from the circumſtances of her paſt life. Needy adventurers (ſuch as my late maſter) paid court to her fortune, in the matrimonial way; while her beauty attracted the more dangerous addreſs of thoſe, who meant no more than pleaſure. But ſhe was guarded againſt both. She had taſted ſomething of the ſweets of virtuous reputation, and knew the value of it too well, to forfeit it entirely again by compliance with the latter; and her pride and experience ſet her above all the ſchemes of the former.

She lived thus for ſome time in the higheſt happineſs of which ſhe had any idea, for ſhe was a ſtranger to that falſe delicacy which creates itſelf imaginary uneaſineſſes, and palls the enjoyment of preſent pleaſures. She was admitted into good company, where her behaviour, if not abſolutely approved of, was ſtill received with good-natured allowances, as much better than might have been expected from the circumſtances of her life; and ſhe herſelf treated with tenderneſs, to encourage her to perſeverance in ſo uncommon an amendment. But this happineſs was too great, to laſt long undiſturbed.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

The common conſequence of over-doing things. Her huſband's relations find out a flaw in his will. The comfort of having good lawyers to keep up a client's ſpirits. For the advantage of having two ſtrings to her bow, ſhe enters into an engagement of marriage, under an heavy penalty. The event of her law-ſuit ſhows the prudence of this precaution. She is caſt; her lover flies off, and ſhe ſues him for the penalty of his engagement. He begs the money among his friends, and then, by a nice fineſſe plays her own game back upon her, and flings her off with half. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

IT daily happens, that men defeat their own intentions by carrying them too far. Hurried away by his paſſions, her huſband, in making his will, had exceeded the power veſted in him by the law, and ſo, by ſtriving to give her more than he had a right, really gave her much leſs. But it was a conſiderable time before his family recovered ſufficiently from the aſtoniſhment and confuſion with which ſuch a ſtroke overwhelmed them, to perceive this, and be able to purſue proper meaſures for taking advantage of it.

The firſt notice my miſtreſs received of this affair, was by an offer they made her, to refer their claim to private deciſion, in order to avoid the expence and trouble of a law-ſuit. But, though the former part of her life had impreſſed her with horror at the very name of the law, ſhe would not liſten to ſuch a propoſal, without taking *proper* advice, the reſult of which may be eaſily judged.

Lawyers

Lawyers will never loſe a good client for want of giving hopes. Her's perſuaded her ſo fully of the juſtice of her cauſe, and gave her ſuch poſitive aſſurance of ſucceſs, that ſhe reſolved to ſpare no expence to obtain it. Though *right* and *wrong* are ſo eſſentially different from each other, they yet are ſometimes involved in ſuch intricacies, by the induſtry of thoſe whoſe profeſſion it is to diſtinguiſh between them, that it is difficult to know which is which. It was ſo in this caſe. They had raiſed ſuch clouds, that reaſon could not ſee through them; and ſo every one was left to ſpeak according to inclination.

While matters were in this ſituation, one of her admirers thought it a proper time to puſh his fortune with her. His rank and expectations in life raiſed him above the neceſſity of ſuch a ſcheme: but avarice will ſtoop to any thing; and he would gladly have taken her, with all her faults, for the ſake of her fortune, the certainty of her eſtabliſhing her right to which he had taken care to be well aſſured of, by ſages learned in the law, before he laid ſiege to her. This, however, he was far from avowing. He pleaded the moſt diſintereſted love, and preſſed for a return, with all the ardency of deſire.

But though ſhe could not do ſo much injuſtice to her charms, as to doubt their power of inſpiring ſuch a paſſion, ſhe poſitively refuſed to liſten to any propoſals of marriage till her law-ſuit ſhould be decided, *from a generous fear of involving him in inconveniencies*, which her lawyers poſitively aſſured her could never happen; as he, *with equal generoſity*, founded on the like aſſurances, offered to marry her while it was ſtill depending; whereas the truth of the matter was with both, that *he thought*

thought he could make a better bargain, as ſhe knew ſhe muſt a worſe, if it ſhould be concluded, till every thing was abſolutely ſettled.

They had played this game upon each other for ſome time, when a diffident word dropped by one of her lawyers, as the day of deciſion drew near, determined to change her ſyſtem, and make ſure of ſomething, for fear of the worſt. Accordingly, the next time her lover viſited her, on his repeating his profeſſions of the violence of his paſſion, and offering, as a proof of its diſintereſtedneſs, to enter into a mutual engagement of marriage, as ſoon as the ſuit ſhould be ended one way or other, under the penalty of a large ſum of money on the refuſer, ſhe let herſelf be overcome by ſuch an inſtance of ſincerity, and, taking him at his word, ſigned the engagement directly.

The event juſtified this caution; for, after all the aſſurances of ſucceſs, by which ſhe had been led on by her lawyers to run into every expence they could deviſe, juſtice appeared ſo ſtrongly in favour of her opponents, that ſhe *was caſt*: and a conſiderable part of the eſtate of her huſband adjudged to return directly to his family, and the reſt after her death.

Though what remained to her was more than ſufficient to ſupport her in the genteeleſt manner, ſhe could not but feel at firſt a fall from ſo high hopes: but her ſpirit had been too well exerciſed, in the beginning of her life, to yield long to any thing; and ſhe had almoſt got the better of it, when ſomething that piqued her reſentment rouſed her effectually. Among all the *friends*, who came on this occaſion *to gratify the inſolence of condoling her misfortune*, ſhe was not a little ſurprized never to ſee the face of her lover. As ſhe could not be at a loſs

a loſs for the mean motive of ſuch behaviour, ſhe might poſſibly have treated it with the contempt it deſerved, had not neceſſity urged her to ſhow a warmer reſentment.

The expences of her law-ſuit had involved her in debts (for ſhe never lowered her living, depending on the aſſurances given her of ſucceſs) which were now demanded with an importunity that perplexed her. This was juſt at the time when ſhe took notice of the deſertion of her lover. The urgency of her creditors therefore ſuggeſted it to her, to call upon him to fulfil his engagement of marriage, which his conduct convinced her he would forfeit the penalty rather than do, by which means ſhe ſhould puniſh him for his raſhneſs, and extricate herſelf from her difficulties at the ſame time; for, had ſhe thought that he would fulfil it, there was nothing ſhe would not have ſuffered, ſooner than link her fate to him.

There is ſomething in a woman's calling upon a man to marry her, ſo contrary to thoſe notions of delicacy, on which the ſuperior claſs of the female ſex value themſelves, that perhaps no other woman of her rank could have prevailed upon herſelf to do. But ſhe had not been born in, nor bred up with expectations of that rank: her notions therefore were of a coarſer complexion; and, though ſhe had learned the external modes of behaviour, *the trick of complaiſance*, ſhe had been put to ſchool too late in life, to change her ſentiments ſo far, as to make her think it neceſſary to ſacrifice ſo powerful motives as reſentment and intereſt, to a delicacy that appeared to her merely phantaſtic.

The moment, therefore, the thought occurred, ſhe applied once more to her lawyer; and by his advice

advice wrote a letter to her lover, in which ſhe directly claimed the performance of his engagement. But as this was no more than his heart told him he muſt expect, (for he would have done the very ſame thing himſelf), he was prepared how to anſwer her. Accordingly he wrote to her in the moſt artful manner, excuſing his not having been to wait upon her ſince the fatal deciſion of her law-ſuit, on account of the pain he muſt feel at ſeeing her, when he had loſt all hopes of ever calling her his. For as her generoſity would not permit her to marry while there was only a poſſibility of ſuch a misfortune, he could not ſuppoſe that her ſenſe of honour and juſtice would now, when it had actually happened; and for this reaſon he deſired that ſhe ſhould pleaſe to ſend him his engagement, not that it was of any conſequence, as he would return her's, to whom he wiſhed the higheſt happineſs in every ſcene and view of life.—Such a refuſal was juſt what ſhe wanted. She therefore inſtantly commenced a ſuit at law with him to recover the penalty of his engagement, which he had thus forfeited to her.

The care he had taken himſelf to make the engagement as binding as poſſible, precluding every hope of defeating her claim, and his knowledge of her temper convincing him that it would be in vain to attempt prevailing on her to drop it, now ſhe had once begun, he had recourſe to an expedient to extricate him from this difficulty, of the ſame mean kind with that which brought it upon him. Accordingly, though he was well enough able to pay the penalty himſelf, as he did not chooſe to fulfil his engagement by marrying, he put on a poor face, and went begging to all his relations for their aſſiſtance, pleading poverty, and alleging

the

the diſgrace it would bring upon the whole family if he ſhould be obliged to marry ſuch a woman, whom he repreſented in the blackeſt colours, exaggerating every circumſtance of her life. Though this might juſtly have been retorted upon himſelf for ever thinking of her, they took pity on his diſtreſs, and raiſed the money for him by a general contribution.

Such ſucceſs encouraged him to hope for farther, and try the force of his eloquence upon my miſtreſs. For this purpoſe he deſired an interview, which ſhe had with much reluctance conſented to give him the next morning after I came into her poſſeſſion.

I had ſeen vice and folly in a variety of ſhapes, but never did the human heart appear to me in ſo contemptible a light as his upon this occaſion. He began his attack with flattery, profeſſing the higheſt reſpect, and lamenting, in the moſt paſſionate terms, that the difficulty of his circumſtances would not permit him to have the happineſs of marrying her, and appealed to her generoſity and juſtice, as before, for a releaſe from an engagement that it muſt be the ruin of them both to fulfil. But all was in vain. She ſcarce deigned to make him any anſwer, and that only to tell him, that his profeſſions and arguments were equally ineffectual to alter a reſolution, which the baſeneſs of his behaviour alone had made her take. Not quite diſcouraged by ſuch a repulſe, he inſtantly changed his method of application. He threw himſelf at her feet, implored her compaſſion on his poverty, and offered, as the utmoſt it would permit him to do, to pay her down half the penalty directly, concluding with ſaying, that if ſhe

refuſed to accept of that, he had no other reſource but even to fulfil his engagement, and marry her.

This was fighting the devil at his own weapons. The mention of marriage was a ſtroke ſhe was not prepared for. Startled at the thought, therefore, as ſhe knew not what deſpair might drive him to; ſhe agreed to his propoſal, and ſo they divided the money between them, (for he prudently pocketed the other half himſelf, as he could not think of offering ſuch an affront to his friends as to return any part of their bounty) and were equal gainers by a bargain in which each outwitted the other.

Though what my miſtreſs got, fell ſhort of her expectation, it anſwered the double end of gratifying her reſentment, and paying her debts; on the latter of which occaſions *I left her ſervice.*

CHAP. X.

CHRYSAL *makes ſome out-of-the-way remarks on matrimony. Deſcription and hiſtory of his new maſter.* CHRYSAL *vindicates his uſing a common expreſſion. His maſter's firſt riſe from a beggar to a foot-boy. He gains his maſter's favour, of which he makes the uſe natural to be expected from his firſt education. Some account of a relation of his* PRINCIPAL's. *The danger of giving advice.* CHRYSAL's *maſter inſinuates himſelf into the* COLONEL's *liking, and undermines the Principal in his regard.*

I HAVE obſerved, in the courſe of this account of my late miſtreſs, that you have been ſhocked at the thought of a man's marrying a woman

man in her circumſtances. To you, who view life only by the light of reaſon, it muſt certainly appear moſt unaccountable; but better acquaintance with the ways of the world would reconcile you to that, and many other things equally groſs and ſhocking in ſpeculation.

Marriage is a mutual truſt of honour. A man's marrying a woman therefore who has loſt her honour, is truſting his whole fortune to a bankrupt who has no ſecurity to give for that truſt; a foolhardineſs that muſt proceed from either a conſciouſneſs of having himſelf no honour to loſe, a total diſregard to the loſs, or an affectation of acting on different principles from the reſt of mankind, as a proof of being above their prejudices. Where her honour indeed has been loſt to himſelf, juſtice makes it a duty upon him to repair her loſs by marriage; but then that very marriage is a puniſhment for his crime, as it muſt want the eſſential happineſs of confidence; for he will always be ready to ſuſpect that the diſpoſition which betrayed her into error with him, may have the ſame effect with others. Nor is this ſuſpicion unnatural.

I ſee you would argue, from the habitual, avowed incontinence of man, that this truſt of honour is not equal, and therefore cannot be obliging. But this is judging, without duly conſidering the ſubject. Chaſtity is in its nature a virtue equally the duty of both ſexes to obſerve; and, with regard to ſociety in general, the violation of it is equally criminal in both: but in thoſe nearer connections of life, the intereſt of which is the more immediate object of human attention, the conſequences of that violation in woman, are attended with ſo much greater inconveniences than in man, that, in reſpect to them, the crime is obviouſly leſs pardon-

able in her than in him; and for this reaſon, *this virtue of chaſtity is made in a peculiar manner the honour of woman*, while *the honour of man* is placed *in other virtues*, from which ſhe receives as much advantage as he does from her chaſtity, and therefore the truſt of honour is mutual and equal.—— In diſtinguiſhing thus between *honour* and *virtue*, I ſpeak according to the notions of mankind; in their own nature, there is no diſtinction between them.

There was ſomething in the whole appearance of the perſon to whom my miſtreſs *paid me away*, that made me expect to ſee a character, of a caſt which I had not yet met with among mankind. His looks were ſly, methodical and plodding. Practice had fixed upon his paſſive face the hollow varniſh of a ſervile ſmile; and an over-acted affectation of polite behaviour made his natural awkwardneſs truly ridiculous. But under all this, I could ſee a depth of deſign, and a latitude of principle equal to any *great* attempt, the ſucceſs of which ſhould, in the opinion of the world, determine the quality of that *greatneſs*, whether *villany* or *virtue*.

The knowledge of his life, which is neceſſary to explain his character, and account for the principles upon which he acted conſiſtently his manifold part, will be compriſed in a few words. Sprung from the dregs of the people, and turned looſe upon the world to ſhift for himſelf as ſoon as he was able to crawl, he took his ſtand about the houſe of a perſon in buſineſs, where he hardly earned a morſel of broken victuals by running of errands, cleaning ſhoes, and ſuch other offices as are performed by thoſe *ſervants* of *ſervants*.

I ſee

I ſee you wonder at my ſaying he was ſprung from *the dregs of the people*, as if difference of rank could make any alteration in the eſſential equality of human nature: but, without entering into a diſcuſſion of *undetermined* points, on both ſides of which much has been ſaid with equal ſtrength of reaſon; the beſt obſervation of the power of early example, to impreſs thoſe principles which are to govern the future life, will ſufficiently juſtify my uſing the expreſſion here.

The patience with which he was obliged to bear the cuffs and kicks of thoſe worſt of tyrants, who always wantonly revenge ten-fold, upon their wretched underlings, whatever they ſuffer themſelves, taught him that hypocriſy and abject ſubmiſſion to every thing that might any way ſerve his convenience, which afterwards proved the ground-work of his fortune; as the example of his parents, who got their living by retailing to the poor the meaneſt neceſſaries of life, initiated him ſo early into every ſpecies of low fraud and chicane, that they became abſolutely natural to him, and invariably ruled the conduct of his life.

He had been ſome time in this hopeful courſe of education, when an accident opened him an opportunity of ſhowing what a progreſs he had made in it. A brother of the perſon about whoſe houſe he picked up the ſcraps that kept him alive, happening to ſee one of the ſervants beating him unmercifully, interfered from mere humanity, and ſaved him. The marks he bore of his beating, raiſed a curioſity to know how he had deſerved it; when he gave ſo ſeemingly innocent and pitiable an account of himſelf, and attributed the ſervant's cruelty ſo artfully to his having refuſed to do ſomething for him which was im-

proper for him to do, that the young gentleman believed him, and, taking compaſſion on his diſtreſs, admitted him into the family to wait upon himſelf, by which he was delivered from his dependence on the other ſervants, and protected from their future inſults.

The humility with which he behaved himſelf in this firſt ſtep of his advancement, his aſſiduity, and ſeeming attachment to his maſter, ſoon won his good opinion ſo far, that he diſpenſed with his attendance, and ſent him to ſchool, where he applied himſelf ſo cloſely, and made ſuch a proficiency, that his maſter took him into his own buſineſs, in which his ſobriety, diligence, and obedient temper, gained his confidence ſo entirely, that as ſoon as ever he thought him capable, he admitted him into fellowſhip with himſelf, and abſolutely reſigned the management of his whole buſineſs to him.

It may naturally be ſuppoſed, that he did not neglect to improve ſuch an opportunity of practiſing the leſſons he had learned in his youth. He ſecreted the profits of all the buſineſs, which his principal was not indiſpenſibly obliged to be perſonally engaged in; he ſupplanted him with ſuch as he could of his cuſtomers; he cheated of conſiderable ſums of money, ſuch others as long experience of his (the principal's) honeſty had put off their guard with him; and took every occaſion of inſinuating to the world, under the moſt effectual diſguiſe of friendly concern and complaint, his negligence and incapacity; at the ſame time, that he profeſſed to himſelf the moſt implicit reſpect and obedience, and ſeemed ambitious of ſhowing his gratitude and attachment, by performing

forming the ſame ſervile offices which had been his firſt occupation about him.

But all this was trifling, in compariſon with the ſtroke he made againſt him in his own family. There was a near relation of his principal's, who was indebted to his friendly aſſiſtance for the firſt ſtep of his riſe to *the rank of a colonel in the army*. Nature had been laviſh to him in the endowments of mind and body; but pride marred the bleſſing, and turned them all to his diſadvantage. Confidence in the external graces of his perſon made him neglect the improvement of his underſtanding, while an affectation of *ſingularity*, which is always aſſumed as a maſk to hide real ignorance, made him ſet his own opinion in oppoſition to the eſtabliſhed judgment of mankind.

As the conduct of ſuch a man muſt neceſſarily be irregular, his relation and friend, my maſter's principal, exerted the authority of thoſe characters, and frequently reproved him in the ſincerity and well-meaning of his heart. The notion that this liberty, which, when properly taken, is the higheſt proof of regard, was aſſumed on the ſcore of obligation, gave offence to the captious haughtineſs of the *colonel*'s temper, and eſtranged an eſteem which it ought to have confirmed.

This was an opportunity for my maſter to diſplay his talents. He ſtudied the temper of *the colonel*, and paid court to his caprices. He cringed to his haughtineſs, bore his inſults, and miniſtered to his vices, with an implicit ſubmiſſion to his ſuperior ſenſe and judgment, which he received as the only ſtandard of right and wrong.

The contraſt between this complaiſance, and the ſuperiority which *the colonel* thought his relation aſſumed by giving him advice, inſenſibly transferred

transferred to my maſter that regard which his principal loſt. As this was what he had all along aimed at, he omitted nothing to widen the breach by inſinuations, ſo artfully conveyed, as to aggravate the offence taken by *the colonel*, and yet, if repeated, would bear a ſenſe directly oppoſite, and ſeem to ſpring entirely from friendly concern, ſhould a reconciliation between them bring his practices to light. But an event, that he could not ſcheme for, removed every ſuch apprehenſion, and rivetted his influence beyond his moſt ſanguine hopes.

CHAP. XI.

Farther account of the COLONEL. CHRYSAL'*s maſter, in conjunction with a female aſſociate proper for his purpoſe, completes his ſcheme of alienating the* COLONEL'*s regard from his family, of which he gives a proof, of a moſt extraordinary nature. A remarkable inſtance of* CHRYSAL'*s maſter's talents for a particular kind of wit, with a ſtriking account of the worthy manner in which he and his fair aſſociate acquitted themſelves of the truſt repoſed in them by the* COLONEL.

VAIN of the beauty of his perſon, *the colonel* prided himſelf in an opinion, that there was no woman whoſe virtue could reſiſt his addreſſes. This ſelf-conceit, which the frailty of the lower claſs of females had firſt given riſe to, was confirmed by his ſucceſs with one whoſe fortune and education ſhould have ſecured her againſt his attacks. The glory of ſuch a conqueſt ſatisfied his vanity;

vanity; and the pleaſure of having her on his own terms ſo endeared her to him, that he thought not of any other. One thing only gave him concern about her, which was, in whoſe care he ſhould leave her, when the buſineſs of the *campaign* called him into the *field*.

But in this he was not long at a loſs. The humble implicit attachment of my maſter, pointed him out as the perſon in every reſpect moſt proper for ſuch a truſt. To him, therefore, he committed her at his departure, hugging himſelf in the happineſs of having ſuch a miſtreſs, and ſuch a friend.

The nature of this truſt neceſſarily brought on an intimacy between my maſter and his *charge*. Intimacies between the ſexes are dangerous in any circumſtances; but in theirs, where ſhe could not even make pretence to that virtue which could be her only guard, the conſequence is obvious. From this time, they joined their intereſts, and laid their heads together to eſtrange him from his own family, particularly my maſter's Principal, who, in caſe of death, had the firſt claim, from law and nature, to his fortune.

In carrying on this ſcheme, they played into each other's hands with ſuch addreſs at his return, that when he was going to the next *campaign*, he made a will, by which he gave, not only his own large acquiſitions, but alſo the inheritance of his anceſtors, between them, in ſuch a manner as plainly ſhewed a wrong mind, and ſupported his bequeſt with ſuch reaſons, as were an inſult to the laws and religion of his country; at the ſame time that they perpetuated the infamy of thoſe to whom it was made, by arguing expreſsly in favour of the vices which had gained them this mark.

mark of regard; and this will, the ſubſtance of which ſatisfied them for the circumſtances, he left in the hands of my maſter.

In this ſituation matters ſtood between the three, when I came into his poſſeſſion. When he had finiſhed the drudgery of the day; he went, as uſual, to ſpend the evening agreeably with his *charge*.

There was one ſpecies of what is called *wit*, upon his expertneſs in which, my maſter valued himſelf not a little. This was, telling a fictitious ſtory with ſo grave a face, and corroborating it with ſuch plauſible circumſtances, as to raiſe the hearer's anxiety, and then to laugh at the eaſy faith that could be ſo *taken in*. Low as the merit of *ſuch wit* was, at the beſt, in him it had none at all. His fictions were no better than downright *lies*, deſtitute of imagination or humour, and corroborated with nothing but *new-coined oaths* and *imprecations*, fit to afford entertainment only to the damned.

With an eſſay of this kind he reſolved to entertain his miſtreſs this evening. Exerting, therefore, all his command of countenance, "My "deareſt love, (ſaid he, with a melancholy look, "and deep-drawn ſigh, as he entered the room), "I have received bad news, *blaſt my eyes!* there "has been a battle, in which our fool"———

"Has not been killed! (interrupted ſhe, ſnatch-"ing the word out of his mouth), that is bad "news indeed; but another battle may afford "better."———

I *ſee* you were ſtruck with horror at my repeating the imprecations he made uſe of on this occaſion. Inſtead, therefore, of intermixing them with every period of his diſcourſe, as he always does,

does, I will in their place make a pauſe thus ——, which will ſerve as well, for he uſes them, in general, as no mere than mere expletives.

" No! (anſwered he, ſhrugging up his ſhoulders), that chance is loſt for ever ——. He has received a wound ———, which, without endangering his life, has diſabled him from farther ſervice; ſo that we ſhall be bleſt with his company ——, for the reſt of our lives."

" Curſed, you ſhould ſay! But is there no way to be thought of to prevent it? Could not proper application be made to the ſurgeons?"

" All is too late! his leg was taken off directly ——, and the danger entirely over when the account came away; as you may ſee by his letter, in which he writes me word ——, that he hopes to be at home with us in a month, to leave us no more. Eh! what have I done with his letter?——It ſhould be in this pocket! I certainly have left it behind me in my confuſion——But you'll ſee it ſoon enough. He ſends his love to you; and bids me tell you, he would have wrote to you, but was prevented by company; ſo that you ſee he cannot be in any danger ——. But he'll make you amends. I ſee how every thing will be ——. He'll marry you as ſoon as he returns ——, that he may introduce you into his family, who will treat you with forced civility, in order to get him into their hands again. I ſee very well —— how every thing will happen."

" No! that ſhall never happen! I hate themſelves, and deſpiſe their civility. I had rather bear the ſneers and inſults of the world than that. Nor will I marry him, let what will be my fate. His inſolent capricious humour is

" ſcarce

"ſcarce to be borne now, though he curbs it, be-
"cauſe I am at my liberty to leave him. What
"would it then be, were I to be his ſlave for life?
"I had rather feign penitence, and throw myſelf on
"the compaſſion of my own family, than plunge
"into ſuch miſery. Marriage on any terms is a
"ſtate I deſpiſe, but with him I abjure it."

This paſſion was ſuch a triumph to my maſter, that he could keep his countenance no longer. "Hah! hah! hah! a fair *humbug*, damn me, "(ſaid he, burſting out into a horſe-laugh), your "humble ſervant, madam! I thought you could "not be *taken in*. Hah! hah! hah! a fair *hum-*"*bug*, damn me."

"*Taken in!* (ſaid ſhe, vexed at being played "upon, but more pleaſed that it was no worſe), "how can you take delight in ſuch a low-lived "trick? If I could not ſhew my wit in a better "manner, I am ſure I would give up all preten-"ſions to it."

"All pure ſpite and malice? But don't fret for "it. Come! we'll kiſs and friends, and think "no more of the matter; only remember not to "brag another time that you cannot be *taken in* "though—hah! hah! hah!"

Every thing being thus made up, their converſation for the reſt of the evening was ſuch as may be ſuppoſed between perſons of their caſt, and in their ſituation. They gloried in the ſucceſs of their ſchemes upon their common dupe *the colonel;* they formed plans for ſpending his fortune, ſhould any lucky accident put an end to his life; they ridiculed the pride and ſelf-ſufficiency of which they had taken advantage; and concluded, in their uſual way, with proving, in each other's arms, *the juſtneſs* of his confidence in their fidelity.

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL's maſter receives an account of the death of the Colonel. He finds, after much deliberation, that he cannot fling his worthy aſſociate out of the whole ſpoil, and therefore prudently reſolves to ſhare it with her by a marriage, of which he draws a comfortable picture. He urges his ſuit, and ſhe ſtrives to evade it by arguments conſiſtent with both their characters. He carries his point in a particular manner.

BUT all this harmony was ſoon diſturbed for ever, by the accompliſhment of the very ſchemes it was founded on, which was much nearer than they imagined. The firſt news my maſter received on his return home the next morning, was, that *the colonel* had been killed in a late battle. This was an intereſting event! he directly locked himſelf up in his cloſet, and taking out the will, though he had often read it before, ſtudied every ſyllable of it over and over, to try if there was any poſſibility for him to *fling* his own and *the colonel's* common miſtreſs, and get the whole fortune himſelf; but he had the mortification to find that this exceeded all his ſagacity, and that the whole will muſt ſtand or fall together.

After ſome, not the moſt pleaſing meditation therefore, "And ſo! (ſaid he, biting his nether "lip, and turning up his eyes, with an execra- "tion too horrid to be repeated), I have been la- "bouring all this while to get a fortune for this "*brimſtone!* A very pretty reward, truly, for ſup- "planting my beſt benefactor! it were better for "me that even he had it than ſhe; for then I

" might not only enjoy my ſhare of it as it goes,
" along with him, but alſo very probably cheat
" him out of the moſt of it in the end. What
" though I am to have it after her death! may
" not ſhe live as long as I? Beſide, I have made
" away with the greateſt part of the money, and
" ſo am liable to be *blown up* and undone, when-
" ever ſhe thinks proper to call it in; for I know
" too much of her to expect that ſhe ſhould ſhew
" favour to any one, when once in her power.
" No! that ſhall never be! I have it in my power
" to ſet aſide the whole unnatural, nonſenſical
" will, and I will do it, if ſhe refuſes to come
" into terms with me. Such a ſacrifice of my
" own intereſt to gratitude and honeſty, as this
" will appear, will gain me ſo great reputation,
" that I ſhall make a better fortune myſelf in a
" little time; and as to what I have embezzled,
" I know by experience that I can *ſink* that upon
" my wiſe principal at a proper time, as I have
" done more before now; ſo that, after all, I may
" find honeſty to be the beſt policy, as the ſaying
" is. Well, be that as it will, I am reſolved to
" be honeſt to myſelf firſt, and do that which
" ſhall ſerve my own intereſt beſt, without regard
" to proverb or opinion. Let me conſider then!
" ſuppoſe I marry her, and ſo get poſſeſſion of all
" at once. But the devil of it is, that I muſt take
" her into the bargain; and I know her too well
" for that, if I could help it. She may moſt like-
" ly ſerve me the ſame trick with ſome body elſe,
" that ſhe has ſerved this fool with me; *once a*
" *whore, and always a whore.* However, I muſt
" take my chance for that. Cunning as ſhe is,
" ſhe ſhall not cuckold me eaſily. If I am not a
" match for her, ſhe muſt be able to outwit the
" devil

" devil himſelf; ſo happy come lucky, I'll e'en " venture."

Having reaſoned himſelf into this prudent reſolution, he would loſe no time, but went to her directly to carry it into execution. As ſoon as he met her, " I have brought you news now (ſaid " he) in earneſt. News that will be either good or " bad, according as you take it."

" Pſha! (anſwered ſhe ſlightingly) this is more " of your *wit*, I ſuppoſe. But for Heaven's ſake " leave off making a fool of yourſelf, and teazing " me. I am quite ſick of ſuch ſtuff."

" *Strike me to the centre* (replied he paſſionate- " ly), but I am ſerious. I have this moment " received an account, that *the colonel* is actually " dead. He was killed in the late battle."

The look with which he ſaid this, had more weight with her, than all the oaths and imprecations he could utter; for, much as he was maſter of his countenance, he could not conceal the agitation of his mind.—" Dead! (interrupted ſhe, " eagerly) Thank Heaven, then, all my fears are " over!"

" Aye (replied he drily), but it is well if your " hopes are not alſo over with them."

" How? What do you mean? Has he not " made a will, by which all his fortune comes " directly to me? For Heaven's ſake, do not " torture me in this manner."

" Yes! he has made a will, it is true. But " don't you know that the laſt letter I received " from him revoked it? ſo that every thing goes " now to his family; for he lived not long enough " to make another after he received his wound; " though that is no great loſs to you; for from " what he ſaid when he was dying, it would not " have been much in your favour."

" But did not you promiſe me that you would " ſuppreſs that revocation, in caſe any thing of " this kind ſhould happen; which you ſaid you " had it in your power to do, as your principal " was fool enough to promiſe you, that he would " never open any letters that ſhould come direct- " ed to you from the army, as he had a right to " do, by which means it had luckily eſcaped com- " ing to his knowledge?"

" Perhaps I may have ſaid ſo; but do you " think I have no more conſcience than to con- " ceal ſuch a thing, and rob a man to whom I " am under ſo great obligations?"

" Conſcience! For Heaven's ſake, I conjure " you again, do not torture me any longer. Speak " of conſcience to thoſe who do not know you. " I have had ſufficient proof, that your *intereſt* is " your *conſcience;* and this will ſurely determine " you to ſerve me, as you ſerve yourſelf at the " ſame time. Is not all to come to you at my " death?"

" But what am I to do in the mean while? " Come then, as you ſay you know me ſo well, " I'll offer you a fair propoſal, that ſhall make it " my *preſent intereſt* (for that is what I re- " gard) to ſerve you; and your *future intereſt*, " on which you lay ſo great a ſtreſs, to ſerve " me. Suppoſe we join our intereſts in all " things, and marry. By this expedient I ſhall " come directly into the enjoyment of the for- " tune, and your children will inherit it."

" Marry! (exclaimed ſhe, ſtarting in ſurpriſe); " what could put ſuch a ſtrange thought into " your head, who know my ſentiments on that " unnatural ſtate of ſuperſtition and ſlavery? No! " that of all things I can never come into. But

" I ſee

" I ſee you are at your *humbugging* again. The " profeſſions and oaths of friendſhip you have ſo " often made me"—" Were all but wind (an- " ſwered he), and have left no trace behind them. " But this kind of talking anſwers no end. The " whole depends on the one word by which you " anſwer me this ſhort queſtion, " Will you " marry me, or will you not?" If you conſent, " I will ſecret the papers that ſet aſide the will, " and ſo we ſhall ſhare the fortune between us. " If you refuſe, I will give them up to his fa- " mily, who will directly defeat your claim, and " then you may follow for your living that liber- " tine way of life you appear ſo fond of; for I " have no notion of damning my character in " this world, and my ſoul in the next, to ſerve " any other but myſelf. Conſider therefore be- " fore you ſpeak, as I will go directly from you " to them, if you refuſe me."

Such a menace was not ineffectual to one who knew him ſo well. " Will nothing elſe ſatisfy " you? (replied ſhe, burſting into tears): No " part of the fortune, and to continue as we are " at preſent, man and wife in every thing but " the curſed ceremony?"

" No! that ceremony is the very thing I want, " and nothing elſe, becauſe that only can give " me a right to your fortune; for as to your per- " ſon, I would not have you think I ſet any value on " that! I have long ſince had enough of it; and " for ſharing the fortune, I am reſolved I will " have all, or none; and this is the reaſon why " I make you ſuch an offer; for otherwiſe, I aſ- " ſure you, I hate marriage as much as you poſ- " ſibly can. So let me have your anſwer direct- " ly, for I will not trifle thus a moment longer."

The manner in which he ſaid this, left her no room to doubt his reſolution. "Well then "(replied ſhe, ſighing), if you will have it ſo, it "muſt be ſo; and I conſent, becauſe I cannot "help it. But when is this bleſſed marriage to "be ſolemnized?"

"As for that, I am in no more hurry than "you. All I deſire is, that you will directly "ſign a promiſe of marriage, whenever I think "proper to call upon you. I'll go this inſtant "and draw it up, and leave you to conſider how "much better this is for us both, than to have "diſagreed, and let all go to his family."

He waited not for a reply; nor was long before he returned with the deed, which ſhe ſigned with evident reluctance.

CHAP. XIII.

Account of the methods which CHRYSAL'*s maſter took to obviate the effects of his principal's reſentment, with the characteriſtic converſation that paſſed between them, on the former's avowing the Colonel's will.* CHRYSAL'*s maſter over-ſhoots his mark, and provokes his principal to do more than he ever intended. An uncommon inſtance of the juſtice of the world.* CHRYSAL'*s maſter obliges the lady to court him in her turn, and at length marries her. The conſequence of ſuch a marriage, and fruits of the ſucceſs of all their ſchemes.*

THIS point being ſettled, the next thing was to produce *the colonel's* will, the thought of doing

doing which, gave him ſome alarm in ſpite of all his fortitude, as it would be throwing off the maſk he had worn all his life, and declaring war with his principal, who, he judged from himſelf, would not fail to publiſh to the world the meanneſs of his original, and the miſery from which his compaſſion had raiſed him.

But ſuch thoughts, diſagreeable as they might be, could not divert him from his purpoſe. To diſable his principal, though, as far as poſſible from carrying his reſentment any farther than words, he ranſacked all his papers, and took away not only ſuch as related immediately to the private tranſactions between themſelves, but alſo thoſe of other people with whom they had been concerned in buſineſs, in order to diſtreſs his circumſtances, and involve him in ſuch perplexities as ſhould lay him under a neceſſity of keeping fair with him. But this precaution, like many others dictated by the ſame ſpirit, occaſioned the very thing it was deſigned to prevent.

The firſt news of the affair was like a thunder-clap to the family of *the colonel*. My maſter's principal, though, who, in the courſe of law and nature, had the firſt expectations, as I have ſaid before, could not believe it to be true, ſo high was his confidence in the honeſty and attachment of my maſter. To ſatisfy, however, the importunities of his family, he came to him, and with a look of indignation at the baſeneſs of ſuch a report, rather than apprehenſion of the truth of it, "I am come (ſaid he) to tell you a piece of "news I have juſt this moment heard, which is, "that *the colonel* has left his whole fortune be-"tween that jade his miſtreſs, and you; and that "you were privy to his will, which he left in

"your

" your hands when he was going abroad. But " the latter part of the ſtory makes me eaſy about " the reſt; for whatever his capricious temper " might lead him to do, I am convinced you " would have no hand in ſo baſe an affair, nor " even conceal his having ſuch an intention from " me a moment. I ſee you are ſhocked at the " ſcandalous imputation; but do not think I " mention it as if I believed it. I could not do " you ſo much wrong."

The firſt impreſſions of youth can never be totally effaced. Though my maſter could lay ſchemes to cheat the principal, and revile him behind his back, he had learned to look at him with an awe, when a beggar about his brother's houſe, and afterwards his ſervant, that he could never after get over when in his preſence. This awe, added to the confuſion of conſcious guilt, made him unable to make any anſwer for ſome moments, and had wrought that change in his countenance which the other took notice of.

As ſoon as he could collect ſpirits to ſpeak, " I—I—I am obliged to every one f—f—for their " good opinion of me (ſaid he, with his eyes fix- " ed on the ground, and faultering at every " word), and hope I ſhall not f—f—forfeit it, by " accepting the favours of my friends."

" How! (interrupted the other eagerly) what " can you mean by that? You ſurely do not, " cannot avow"———

" As for that, Sir," (returned my maſter, plucking up a little more aſſurance) " what I a- " vow or diſavow is nothing to the purpoſe. I " preſume that my *moſt dear and worthy friend*, " *the colonel*, had a right to leave his fortune to " whom he pleaſed; and that whoever he has left

" it

" it to has alſo a right to take it, without being " anſwerable to your opinion, or that of any " others who may be prejudiced by you; for the " world will judge better, and be ſatisfied that he " had ſufficient reaſons for what he has done."

" And ſo, then, it is even ſo!" (replied the other, after a long pauſe) " and this is the re- " turn I meet for raiſing you from wretchedneſs, " and admitting you to the firſt place in the e- " ſteem and confidence of my heart. *Cheriſh a* " *viper in your boſom, and he will ſting you to death.* " But it is beneath me to upbraid you. I leave " the revenge of my wrongs to your own conſci- " ence and the juſtice of heaven, and from this " moment diſclaim all intercourſe with you; nor " ſhall my lips ever more utter your name, if I " can help it. The ſight of you is a pain to me! " I will ſend a perſon to take my affairs out of " your hands, and deſire you will directly pro- " vide yourſelf another habitation. Unhappy for " me was the day when I firſt gave ſhelter to your " miſery in mine."—Saying this, he turned away without waiting for a reply, and left the room.

This inſolent behaviour (for ſo my maſter call- ed it, as ſoon as the other was gone) was ſuch an affront to *his honour*, as in his opinion cancelled all obligations, and juſtified every thing he had done or could do againſt him. Giving vent to his reſentment, therefore, in *a burſt of blaſphemous execrations*, he proceeded in the execution of his ſchemes, with this improvement, that, to obviate the imputations of baſe diſhoneſty and ingratitude, which his own conſcience told him his Principal would publiſh to the world againſt him, he loaded him with every ſcandal that his inventive malice could ſuggeſt; but, inſtead of anſwering his pur-

poſe,

poſe, produced the contrary effect, as it put him under a neceſſity of laying open things to vindicate his own character, which indignant ſhame of having placed his confidence ſo unworthily, would otherwiſe have made him conceal; and in this inſtance the world was not dazzled by ſucceſs, but directly repaid his villany with the infamy it deſerved.

As for the lady, faſhion made it neceſſary for her to put on all the mimickry of wo, in which ſhe perſiſted moſt decently for the uſual time, at the end of which ſhe found her huſband, that was to be, ſo ſlack in his addreſſes, that ſhe was obliged to court him, as ſuch an unſettled life was equally contrary to her intereſt and inclinations. This anſwered a double end. It gratified his vanity, (for he took care to make it known) and ſeemed to obviate the credit of the contract between them, ſhould it ever happen to be diſcovered. Accordingly he kept off a little longer, and at length conſented with the affected irreſolution of a man of the moſt delicate principles and ſenſe of honour.

As he only got a *legal* right by his marriage to what he was already in poſſeſſion of, he ſoon grew tired of the ſtate, the circumſtances of which, in his particular caſe, could not be very pleaſing to any man. However, to avoid the evils of which he was moſt immediately afraid, he went to live in the country, where he admitted his wife to ſee nobody but thoſe he approved, and in company with himſelf. Nor was he ſatisfied that his utmoſt vigilance could prove effectual, as he had had experience of the looſeneſs of her principles, and her expertneſs in all the arts of intrigue.

Their

Their ſituation, in theſe circumſtances, may be eaſily conceived. Continual ſuſpicions, quarrels, and recriminations, aggravated their mutual diſlike to the moſt rancorous hatred, and made their lives ſuch a ſcene of miſery, that they themſelves looked upon it as a commencement of heaven's vengeance on their crimes, while all who knew them expected in horror that they would make that vengeance ſtill more ſignally dreadful, by wreaking their hatred upon each other's lives, or their deſpair upon their own.

All the advantages thus dearly earned, were an affluence diſguſting for want of power of enjoyment, except in an external pomp, that only mocked the miſery within, and made the meanneſs it was deſigned to hide the more remarkable.

CHAP. XIV.

CHRYSAL's *maſter deſigns to ſet up a coach, but wants a material article toward making a proper figure with it. He conſults with an* HERALD, *who gives him an elaborate diſſertation, not the moſt pleaſing to him, on* COATS OF ARMS, *and the modern methods of making them, in which he unfolds many curious myſteries, and undertakes at laſt, on proper encouragement, to make him a gentleman.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice. Converſation between his new maſter and an* ANTIQUARIAN. *Curious arguments by which he proves the genuineneſs and importance of certain relics of antiquity.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

IN this age of delicacy and refinement, the firſt thing thought of in genteel life is *a carriage*, which

which is ſo indiſpenſibly neceſſary to procure reſpect, that no eminence in ſcience, no practice of virtue is held in eſteem where that is wanted. Senſible of this, my maſter reſolved to beſpeak one, the elegance and grandeur of which ſhould prove his taſte and magnificent ſpirit. One difficulty though perplexed him not a little in the deſign. This was his want of a *coat of arms* to decorate the outſide of it, and diſplay to the world his illuſtrious deſcent.

After much fruitleſs meditation on ſo important a ſubject, it occurred to him that an *herald* muſt be the proper perſon to conſult with upon the beſt means of remedying this defect. Accordingly, he enquired for the moſt eminent in that way, and on the morning fixed for his attendance, prepared to receive him in ſuch a manner as he imagined could not fail to inſpire him with reſpect. He was lolling at breakfaſt in an elbow-chair, dreſſed in a morning-gown of green damaſk, with a red cap on his head, the cambrick lining of which was edged with a rich lace that turned up over it, and crimſon velvet ſlippers on his feet, one of which was extended on a cuſhion of the ſame materials to give him the appearance of the gout, a diſorder which he looked upon as an inconteſtible proof of his being ſprung from a good family, while his lady poured out his tea, and between every diſh read a paragraph in a newſpaper, to entertain him.

As ſoon as the *herald* was ſhewn in, my maſter caſt an eye upon his lady, and nodding majeſtically toward the door, ſhe withdrew and left him to his buſineſs. After the uſual queſtions about the weather, and the news, my maſter at laſt entered upon the ſubject. "I underſtand, S—S—

"S—Sir,"

" S—Sir," (ſaid he, faultering, and almoſt bluſhing in ſpite of his aſſurance) " that you have " great ſkill in heraldry; and therefore deſired to " ſee you, to conſult about my *c—c—c—coat of* " *arms.*"

" I do preſume, Sir," (anſwered the herald with an air of importance) " to have ſome know- " ledge in that myſterious and ſublime ſcience, " and hope I ſhall not wrong the character you " have received of me in any thing in which you " are pleaſed to employ me. Hem! ahem! Pray, " Sir, what may be the nature of your preſent " commands? I ſuppoſe you want to introduce " into your own *coat*, the *bearing* of ſome branch " of your family which is fallen to you. There " is nothing in the world eaſier to be done, that " is, by one who, as I ſaid before, underſtands " the ſcience. It is only dividing *the field* pro- " perly, and taking care that the *blazoning* of the " different *quarterings*, of which all good families " gain many in a long courſe of deſcents, may " not be wrongly blended, as *colour upon colour*, " or *metal upon metal*, which you muſt know is " *falſe heraldry;* though I beg pardon, your *bla-* " *zoning* is moſt likely in *precious ſtones*, the pecu- " liar emblems of nobility with us. But that " makes no difference, as I will convince you, if " you pleaſe to let me ſee your arms."

" Sir, (replied my maſter, ſtill more confound- " ed by this jargon), that is not what I want. " I would have an entire *n—n—new coat.*"——

" O! I underſtand you, Sir! *you are the firſt of* " *your family;* and want to *make arms* for your- " ſelf, as none of your anceſtors have left you " any. Why, Sir, that too may be done; but it " muſt be with judgment and care, as I ſaid be-

" fore, for fear of interfering with the *arms* of " any other family. But you may truſt me for " that, Sir! Half the *arms* you ſee cut ſuch a fi- " gure about the town, are of my deviſing. *The* " *king may make lords and knights of whom he pleaſes,* " *but it is the herald muſt make them gentlemen:* " for what is any man without *a coat of arms?* " Pray, Sir, what is your name? And of what " profeſſion was your father?"——

" Wh-wh-why do you aſk, Sir? I ſuppoſe there " cannot be any thing material to your purpoſe " in them?"

" Pardon me, good Sir, they are material, very " material. A name, eſpecially if it conſiſts of " many ſyllables, often gives an excellent hint: " for, much as your modern wits may affect to " deſpiſe the myſterious learning of *Rebuſes*, wiſer " antiquity held it in high repute, as you muſt " have obſerved from many illuſtrious *coats of* " *arms*, taken entirely from the name: and then, " knowledge of the profeſſion of a gentleman's " father, is abſolutely neceſſary, for many reaſons. " There are profeſſions, the implements of which " are never *drop'd*, becauſe the profeſſions them- " ſelves are reckoned honourable, as there alſo " are others, nothing relating to which is ever " *borne*, for the contrary reaſon. The ſon of a " general, or an admiral, for inſtance, will have " his *arms* charged with implements of war; but " *the ſon of a man who kept a chandler's ſhop*, will " never *bear* a lump of butter, or a bunch of " candles, nor *the ſon of a taylor* a pair of ſciſ- " ſars or a thimble; for theſe would at once be- " tray what is deſigned to be hid; and therefore, " it is abſolutely neceſſary that I ſhould be in- " formed of theſe particulars."

" B—

" B—b—b—but, Sir, can you not ſtrike out " ſomething entirely new, without alluding to any " name or profeſſion at all? I am willing to pay " you well for your trouble; only let me have " ſomething elegant and grand."

" I underſtand you, Sir, I'll engage to pleaſe " you. I'll *quarter you the coat of a crown'd head* " in an inſtant, without any body's being able to " ſay a word againſt it. Leave it to me, and I'll " engage to pleaſe you; not the richeſt *contractor* " or *Nabob* of them all ſhall make ſuch a figure."

" And pray, Sir, what is your price for a job " of this kind?"—" Price, Sir! I never make " bargains: let common mechanicks do that! " Gentlemen always make me a preſent when " they beſpeak their honours; and according to " the value of that, my invention is either high " or low."

" Well, Sir, it ſhan't ſink on that account now. " Here are ten guineas for you, as an earneſt of " what I will give, if I like your work when it is " done."

" Sir, you may depend on having *the higheſt* " *arms* of any man in the kingdom. Your ge- " neroſity ſhows that you ought to be a gentle- " man; and it ſhall be my fault if I don't make " you one, in the ſight of the world."——Saying this, he took his leave, *when I was heartily glad to go with him, being part of the price paid upon this occaſion for the making of a gentleman.*

As ſoon as my *new* maſter went home, he retired to his cloſet; and, taking out the money he had juſt received, " Hah! hah! hah! no bad " price for a little *daubing!* (ſaid he, laugh- " ing, and chinking the purſe.) I wonder the " fellow could be ſuch an aſs as to think that

" any thing in my power to do could make him " paſs for a gentleman! But let him have his " way! his folly is my gain; and it is no more " than juſtice, that one who has cheated the world " ſo long, ſhould cheat himſelf at laſt, and ſacri- " fice the earnings of villany to vanity! But " hold! this is about the time my *Antiquarian* " was to come. Let me ſee thoſe *ancient manu-* " *ſcripts* and *inſcriptions which I had done laſt week.* " Upon my life they look very well! The *canker* " upon this copper, and the *ſmoke* upon this parch- " ment, are as natural as they were the work of " a thouſand years; and theſe *ſcrawls* might paſs " even for the *ſpells* of the witch of *Endor*, they " have ſo little likeneſs to any marks made to " convey thought at this time. He is a very " pretty fellow that did them, and deſerves en- " couragement."

Juſt as he ſaid this, the perſon he expected came, and, entering without ceremony upon his buſineſs, " I called upon you, Sir, (ſaid he), to " ſee thoſe things you mentioned to me. If they " are really what you deſcribe, we ſhall not differ " about the price, high as it is."

" I hope, Sir, (anſwered my maſter), you have " not ſo mean an opinion of my judgment, as to " imagine I could ever think of impoſing upon " you. No, Sir! I know that to be impoſſible, " even if I could be baſe enough to attempt it; " and therefore would not mention any thing to " you that could admit of the leaſt doubt to a " perſon of your profound learning. As to the " price, I could have had much more ſince I ſaw " you; but I thought it but juſtice to their merit " to offer them firſt to you, as there is no other " collection in the kingdom worthy of them;

" and

" and I am above riſing in a demand I have once
" made, though infinitely ſhort of their intrinſic
" value, as you will be convinced, the moment
" you ſee them. Here, Sir, is the *manuſcript*,
" which I had the good fortune to meet with, as
" I was rummaging among ſome old records in our
" office, that had never been ſtirred ſince the reign
" of *Henry the Eighth*. The paper in which it was
" wrapped was ſo decayed, that it mouldered quite
" away immediately upon its coming into the open
" air, ſo that I had ſcarce time to read the contents,
" which were, *that this parchment had been found*
" *in the tomb of Thomas-a-Becket, upon breaking up*
" *of his ſhrine at the reformation*, and was laid up
" there on account of its antiquity. That it
" muſt have been very ancient, even before his
" time, the colour and decay of the parchment
" would ſufficiently prove, were there not other
" proofs ſtill more convincing to ſuch as have
" judgment to comprehend them. The ſhape of
" the letter ſhows its age. This manner of writ-
" ing, as appears by comparing it with other an-
" cient manuſcripts, was introduced in the be-
" ginning of the ſecond century of the Chriſtian
" æra, and quite dropped by the middle of the
" third. Within that period, therefore, it muſt
" have been written. Its antiquity being thus
" fixed, the purport of it is next to be conſidered;
" and of that, and its importance, there can be
" no juſt room to doubt. This *ſpot* at the bottom
" of the parchment, though ſo much defaced by
" time, bears a ſtrong reſemblance to the impreſ-
" ſion of a *mitre*, and thereby proves, that ſome
" biſhop was the author of what was written over
" it, into which theſe four letters, M—A—T—H,
" fortunately ſo very plain, give the cleareſt light;

" for, as they muſt have been part of the word " ARIMATHEA, they prove that the opinion of " *Joſeph* of *Arimathea*'s having firſt preached the " goſpel in *Britain*, was known ſo early as in the " ſecond century, and ſo decide that long-con- " teſted point; as, who can be ſuch an infidel as " to doubt a thing given thus, as I may ſay, un- " der the ſacred ſeal of the *mitre*, and that ſo " very near the time?"

" Very true! but is it not as probable, that the " deſign of this writing was to refute that opi- " nion, as to confirm it?"

" My good Sir, if you allow weight to ſuch " trivial objections as this, you give up all the " knowledge of an *Antiquarian*, which never a- " mounts higher than to poſſible conjecture, with- " out regard to probability, even againſt him; for " *conjectures*, ſuch as this, *founded on effaced remains* " *of antiquity, are of much greater weight in the* " *learned world, becauſe they ſhew more learning* " *than the plaineſt concluſions, drawn from evident,* " *and compleat records, as theſe are obvious to any* " *common perſon.* But why do I mention theſe " things to you, who underſtand them ſo much " better than I pretend to do?"

" I believe I do, Sir, know ſomething of thoſe " matters; and was ſatisfied both of its antiquity, " and importance, at the firſt glance of my eye; " though I ſtarted that objection for mere amuſe- " ment. But where is the fragment? I ſhould be " glad to ſee that alſo."

" Here it is, Sir;" (anſwered my maſter, tak- ing a bit of broken copper out of a box, in which it was carefully wrapped up in cotton) " this plate " of copper was torn in the manner you ſee, from " the head of a ſepulchral monument, on the top

" of

" of mount *Libanus*, by a perſon who had been " ſent thither, by a celebrated Society, on purpoſe " to ſeek for ſuch things; and at his return made " me a preſent of it, as the moſt valuable acqui- " ſition he had made, out of gratitude for my " having helped him to the job. Obſerve this " *canker*, Sir! Much as it has been rubbed off in " the carriage; the depth and colour of it ſhew, " that it muſt have been ſome thouſands of years " in gathering. What the occaſion of ſetting it " up was, ſome particular circumſtances direct to " a conjecture ſufficiently probable. You ſee this " *hole*, which the canker has eaten almoſt through " the copper, with this *ſtroke* turning up over it. " This certainly is the remains of the figure of a " lion, as is plain from theſe two *tufts* in the mid- " dle, and at the end of the ſtroke, which muſt " have been the tail of it. Now as the lion was " the emblem of *Judah*, it cannot be doubted but " ſome great perſonage of that tribe muſt have " been buried, where this emblem was ſet up; a " circumſtance, that ſo clearly proves the antiquity " of *coats of arms*, that I do not know how to " think of parting with it, it affords ſuch an illuſ- " tration to a treatiſe I am at this time engaged in " writing, on that ſublime and difficult ſubject."

" Not part with it!" (replied the *Antiquarian*, returning it carefully into the box, and then cramming the box into his boſom) " you muſt get it " firſt, my good friend, to part with. Hah! hah! " hah! a very pretty jeſt truly! you offer a thing " to ſale, and ſet a price upon it, and then you " cannot part with it! a very pretty jeſt truly! " Here is your money, both for the *manuſcript*, and " the *fragment:* and when you meet with any " other ſuch precious remains of antiquity, I ſhall

" be

" be obliged to you to let me have the preference.
" No body will give you a better price."

Saying this, he reached my maſter a bank-note, which he took with an air of diſſatisfaction; and while he was telling out change, " You do as you " pleaſe with me, Sir, (ſaid he) this time; but the " next, I ſhall be more upon my guard. I am glad, " however, that it goes into ſo noble a *collection* as " your's, where it will have juſtice done to its " merit."

" Aye, Sir!" (anſwered the *Antiquarian*, with a ſmile of ſelf-complacency) " I have been at ſome " pains, and expence too, to make a *collection*; and " have the ſatisfaction to think, that whenever I " I die, it will make as good a figure in a *ſale ca-* " *talogue* as that of moſt of my cotemporaries. I " ſhall leave proofs behind me, that I have not " ſpent my life in vain. What would I not give " to hear the character which an able *Auctioneer* " will give of me, upon opening the ſale? I wiſh " my good friend *Puff* may outlive me, to have " the job. There is no man ſets forth the merit " of any thing in ſuch happy terms. He has " words at will, as they ſay. What an high opi- " nion will he raiſe of my learning, taſte, and " judgment? But that's right. You ſaid you want- " ed this *fragment*, for a particular occaſion! I am " by no means averſe to obliging you. You are " welcome to quote it, as in my *collection*, ſuppoſe " in this, or ſome ſuch manner, *as appears* (prov- " ing what you have advanced before) *by a moſt* " *valuable, and rare antique fragment*, (or whatever " elſe you ſhall call it) *in the moſt curious*, or *coſtly*, " or *ineſtimable*, or *noble*, (or perhaps all theſe) " *collection of my late moſt learned, and judicious, and* " *indefatigable, and munificent friend*, or whatever

" other

"other titles of the kind your judgment and re-
"gard ſhall dictate to you."

"I am much obliged to you for the favour," (returned my maſter, ſcarce able to reſtrain his laughter) "and ſhall be ſure to avail myſelf of it, "at the proper time, as alſo to do it in a manner, "which, however ſhort it may fall of your merit, "will yet teſtify my high and reſpectful ſenſe of "it."—Saying this, he gave him the change of his note, *among which I was*, and ſent him away happy.

CHAP. XV.

A modeſt method of ſeeking fame. CHRYSAL*'s maſter confirms himſelf in his reſolution to gratify an uncommon curioſity, by a great example. The judicious and learned manner, in which he claſſed and entered his new acquiſitions. Curious remark on the value of books. He goes to an auction, where he makes an extraordinary purchaſe.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice, for that of the Auctioneer. Specimen and effects of his new maſter's eloquence, learning and judgment.*

A MAN's ſpending his life and fortune, in buying up books of learning, and obſcure remains of antiquity, only to make a great ſale after his death, was a method of ſeeking fame more modeſt than I had hitherto met among mankind. As ſoon as my *new* maſter reached home, he went directly into his *muſeum*, and taking out his rare purchaſes, ſtared at them for ſome time in a kind of ſtupid delight: till, no longer able to contain it,

"What

" What an opinion (ſaid he) will the world have " of me, when all theſe come to be ſhewn for " ſale? I hope my worthy friend *Puff* will live to " do me juſtice! What if I ſhould beg of him to " give me a ſpecimen of the manner in which he " will ſet them out? He cannot refuſe me that " gratification, in return for all the money he has " taken from me, eſpecially as I have told him, " that I deſign he ſhall have the job. Such a re- " queſt is not improper. It has the ſanction of " one of the greateſt names in antiquity to ſup- " port it. *Cicero*, the great *Cicero*, deſired his " friend the hiſtorian, to let him know what he " intended to ſay of him; and need I heſitate to " follow his example? Whatever has the authority " of antiquity, muſt be right; and therefore I will " go to him directly about it.——But hold! I " muſt enter theſe articles in my catalogue firſt."

Then taking down an huge folio richly bound, and inſcribed CATALOGUE, on the back and ſides, in capitals of gold, he ſat down to inſert this valuable addition to his treaſure; and, opening the book with great deliberation, " What are the " *heads* (ſaid he) under which they are to be claſ- " ſed? Let me ſee! *Antiques!* no. That is for my " *coins*, and *buſts*, and *urns*. What is the next? " *Ancient manuſcripts*, and *fragments!* Aye! theſe " are they. Let me conſider now what are the " titles!"—Then laying the fore finger of his right hand upon the tip of his noſe, ſupporting his chin with his thumb, ſhutting his eyes, and leaning back in his chair, on the arm of which he reſted his elbow, " How unlucky it was," (reſumed he, after a long pauſe) " that he did not " tell their names! I was aſhamed to aſk him di- " rectly, though I did as much, if he had minded

" me-

" me. But can't I make them out, from what he " ſaid? *A very antique manuſcript*—No, that will " not do. *Antique* is for works of art; *ancient* is " the word here.——*A very ancient manuſcript* " *written by Thomas-a-Becket in the ſecond century,* " *and found in his tomb at the Reſtoration, proving* " *that Joſeph of Arimathea was an Engliſh biſhop.*— " Yes. That is it. And then for the *fragment,* " ——*a very ancient*——no, *antique. Antique* is " the word for *fragments,* they are made by art; " *a very antique fragment, torn from a monument on* " *mount Libanus, proving that ſome great perſon was* " *buried there; and that a lion was the arms of* " *Judah.*—Aye; theſe will do! I knew I could " make them out. This is juſt the ſubſtance of " what he ſaid, but in fewer and better words. " Titles ſhould be ſhort and pithy. *Multum in* " *parvo.* Much in a little compaſs. Let me a- " lone for hitting off a ſtriking title. I have not " been an *Antiquarian* ſo long for nothing."—— Then conning them over twice or thrice, to try how they ſounded, he entered them in his catalogue, and putting the book back into its place, ſat down to contemplate his own conſequence in the learned world.

But ſublime as this enjoyment was, his indefatigable induſtry would not permit him to indulge it long. " Hah!" (ſaid he, ſtarting, as upon ſudden recollection) " that's right! the ſale of " thoſe *Chineſe characters,* brought over in the laſt " fleets, comes on about this very time. It was " quite out of my head; and I would not have " miſſed of them on any account. They'll make " a capital article; for the *Chineſe* taſte is coming " into ſuch great *vogue,* that I ſuppoſe we ſhall " ſoon learn their language, though I ſhould be

" ſorry

" ſorry to ſee that too, as it would leſſen the value " of my *Chineſe* books; for *books are valued now* " *the more for not being underſtood*, as I know by ex- " perience, having laid out many a pound in the " purchaſe of ſuch as I underſtand no more of, " than if they were *Chineſe*. But let thoſe, who " know no other uſe of books but to read them, " buy only ſuch as they can read: I *collect* mine " for another purpoſe, and a noble *collection* I will " have, let it coſt me what it will; I care not " whether I die worth a groat beſide. The fame " of that is fortune enough for me."

Purſuant to this noble reſolution he went directly to the ſale, where he was ſo charmed with the *Auctioneer*'s learning, and eloquence, that he outbade every body, and carried off in triumph *the curious, the rare, the ineſtimable key, into all the myſterious, the profound, the ſublime wiſdom of that prince of all Philoſophers, Legiſlators, and Hierarchs, the divine* CON—FUT—SEE, *and all his learned, and judicious Diſciples and Commentators*, THE CHINESE CHARACTERS, in paying for which, *I changed his ſervice for that of the Auctioneer.*

My new maſter proceeded, for the remainder of the ſale, to diſplay his abilities in the ſame extraordinary manner; giving circumſtantial accounts of things he knew nothing of; and beſtowing the moſt extravagant praiſes for excellencies of his own invention, often inconſiſtent with each other, and with the ſubject to which they were ignorantly attributed, with a confidence that bore down doubt, and gained implicit credit with the gaping crowd, in defiance to reaſon, and their very ſenſes, till he led them on, by little and little, to pay the price of ſuch an imaginary value. But this will be

be beſt explained by an inſtance that happened juſt after I came into his poſſeſſion.

The ſale of that day conſiſted *nominally* of the *collection* of a *Cheeſemonger* lately deceaſed, who had been *an eminent Antiquarian*, and *Virtuoſo*. I ſay nominally; becauſe, though the whole went under his name, ſcarce the tenth part of it had ever been his, the reſt, being *made up* from every quarter by my maſter. Among the *rare*, *curious*, and *coſtly* articles exhibited on this occaſion, was a veſſel of *porcelain*, of an uncommon ſhape, ornamented with ſeveral odd and uncouth repreſentations of animals, and ſome figures, not unlike the characters of a language.

"Gentlemen," (ſaid my maſter, as ſoon as this was produced) "You here ſee one of the rareſt, "and moſt valuable remains of antiquity, ever "brought into *Europe*. This *here* ſuperb vaſe was "the identical cup, out of which the ſublime "emperors of *China* for numberleſs ages drank "the conſecrated wine, on the day of their coro-"nation. It was found, gentlemen, among the "treaſures of the Great *Mogul*, by *Thomas Couli* "*Can*, when he dethroned that *there* prince, out "of the wreck of whoſe ſpoils, when they were "loſt in paſſing the river *of the Indies*, it was ſaved "by a *Chineſe Nabob*, from whom it was after-"wards taken, together with his crown, by that "there *heaven-born* general, who made thoſe effe-"minate, and daſtardly *Indians* tremble at the "name of an *Engliſhman*, and given by him as "a precious token of his eſteem, to the deceaſed, "his very learned and curious friend. This, gen-"tlemen, is in few words the whole full and true "account of this here ineſtimable curioſity, every "word of which can be proved by unqueſtionable "authority.

" authority. As for the vaſe itſelf, excluſive of " all this, its own merits give it ſufficient value. " Obſerve theſe here figures, gentlemen; they are " *Egyptian hieroglyphics*, denoting the duties of a " ſovereign, which thoſe wiſe *Mandarines* always " take care to inſtruct their emperors in. This " here *lion*, for inſtance, ſignifies that he muſt be " courageous and valiant; this *fox*, that he muſt " be wiſe: and ſo on. But the moſt extraordinary " thing of all, gentlemen, is theſe here characters. " They are a *taliſman*, or *charm*, invented by *Ma-* " *homet* to protect the owner of this cup from the " influence of evil ſpirits. I do not preſume, " gentlemen, to ſtand up for the virtue of ſuch " things. The notion of ſpirits, I am ſenſible, is " much exploded; and the religion of *Mahomet* " cried drown among us: but ſtill, gentlemen, " without entering into theſe here nice points, we " all know that he was a great man, and *lived a* " *great while ago*, which is ſufficient to make any " thing that was his, of great value to men of " learning, who are above prejudice in theſe mat- " ters. But beſide all this, theſe here characters " are of the greateſt importance, on another ac- " count; as they prove beyond diſpute, that *the* " *true method of writing the learned languages was* " *without accents*, not one appearing, as you ſee, " gentlemen, in this moſt original, and authentic " relic of antient learning, and ſo put an end to " that there controverſy, that has ſo long puzzled " the world. It were preſumption in me, gentle- " men, to attempt putting a value on a thing that " is invaluable. I will therefore ſet it up at what " you pleaſe, as you are the beſt judges. This " only I will make bold to ſay, that the beſt judge

" of

" of all will have it, as he will give moſt for it;
" for too much it is impoſſible to give."

So juſt an account, and ſuch judicious praiſe, could not fail of effect. The *Virtuoſi* round him, ſatisfied that what he ſaid muſt be true, becauſe ſpoken with confidence, and above their comprehenſion, vied with each other for the poſſeſſion of ſo ineſtimable a treaſure, till they *raiſed* it to an height, at which they themſelves were ſurpriſed, as ſoon as the ſpirit of *bidding* began to cool, and they had time to reflect.

CHAP. XVI.

An unſavory accident ſtops him ſhort in his harangue. He turns off the jeſt, with another, and accounts learnedly for what has happened. The real cauſe, and conſequence of that accident. Reflections on auctioneering, and the cauſes of its ſucceſs.

THIS was the time, for which he always reſerved the higheſt flights of his eloquence, to raiſe that ſpirit again. Reſuming therefore his harangue, " You pauſe, gentlemen, (ſaid he) only " to conſider how much farther you may *riſe* with " ſafety; for it is impoſſible that perſons of your " profound taſte and judgment ſhould diſgrace " them ſo much, as to let ſuch a jewel *go* for ſo " mere a trifle. Do not take my word, gentle- " men, for its value. I may be miſtaken, but you " cannot. Examine it therefore yourſelves. Obſerve " the beauty of theſe here *unknown* figures! *read* " theſe *unintelligble* characters; and ſmell the aro- " matic odour which the vaſe ſtill retains, and

" ever will retain, from the quinteſſences of all " the ſpices of the *Indies*, which uſed to be mixed " with the conſecrated wine. The perfume is al- " moſt enough to revive the dead."

Saying this, he went to ſmell it himſelf, to lead the way to the reſt; and putting the mouth of it to his noſe, without taking off the cover, that the fragrance ſhould not evaporate, as he raiſed his hand, a ſtream that emitted a ſavour far from aromatic, guſhed out into his face, and filled his mouth, as well as noſe, with ſomething more ſubſtantial than perfume.

It is impoſſible to deſcribe his ſituation, at ſuch a diſgraceful accident. Surprize, ſhame, and loathing, aggravated each other, and threw him into ſuch confuſion, as once in his life deprived him of utterance for ſome moments. As ſoon as he had emptied his mouth, and wiped his face, " Villain (ſputtered he to his ſervant), how has " this happened? Whom have you let play me " this baſe, malicious, low-liv'd trick?"

" S—S—Sir (anſwered the fellow, as well as " his ſtruggle to ſuppreſs his laughter permitted " him to ſpeak), I know nothing of the matter. " I never left any one a moment alone among " the things, but them there ladies, who I told " you ſent me out for a glaſs of *Ratifia*, t'other " morning, and how could I have ſuſpected their " doing ſuch a thing?"

" *Ratifia!* (replied my maſter, who had by " this time recovered his aſſurance, and knew the " beſt way to turn off one jeſt is by another) " *Gin*, you ſhould ſay; for if I can judge by taſte " and ſmell, that is their liquor. I ſuppoſe they " did it on purpoſe to revenge their ſex upon " *Mahomet*, for taking away their ſouls (I wiſh

" he

" he had alſo taken away the filthineſs of their " diſpoſitions), by defiling ſo celebrated a monu- " ment of his learning and ſkill in this naſty " manner, hah, hah, hah!"——

The oddity of ſuch a thought naturally made the company join in his laugh, but could not ſo far wipe off the diſgrace which the defiled vaſe had ſuffered, as to make any more be offered for it, ſo that it was forced to be *knocked down* to the laſt *bidder* at not much more than if it had been made of gold, at which the purchaſer and my maſter were equally mortified, though for different and with very unequal reaſons.

As for the cauſe of this misfortune, it was really what the ſervant ſaid. One of the ladies who came to view the curioſities having certain preſſing occaſions, feigned a pretence to ſend him out, and, in the mean time, made ſuch uſe of this vaſe, being the firſt conveniency that came to her hand, as overpowered the ſcent of ſome ſpices which had been put into it for the purpoſe.

It was fortunate for my maſter that this was the laſt article in the ſale of that day, as a ſpirit of ridicule could not be favourable to his buſineſs. As ſoon as the company was gone, he ſettled his accounts, and ſumming up the profits, " Why, " this is pretty well! (ſaid he, rubbing his hands " and ſhrugging up his ſhoulders) this does pretty " well! though if that damned accident had not " happened (turning up his noſe, and ſpitting " with loathing), it would have been much bet- " ter. The fools were in the humour, and " wanted only to be kept up. However, I have " not much right to complain upon the whole. " That there *Jordan* coſt me five ſhillings, and I " have ſold it for fifty pounds. Much good may

" the judicious buyer make of his bargain. This
" is the happineſs of a man's having his tongue
" *well hung*. A mealy mouth will never do in
" my buſineſs; which after all is the beſt going.
" I might have ſtood freezing behind a counter
" this month, and not made half this much. In
" the way of *fair trade*, as it is called, people
" have their ſenſes about them, and ſtand to exa-
" mine before they buy, but any trumpery will
" go off in this way."

I have obſerved your aſtoniſhment at the eaſi-neſs with which my maſter ſucceeded in ſuch groſs impoſition; but the reaſon of it is obvious. All mankind have an ambition of diſtinguiſhing themſelves one way or another, and generally chooſe that in which they have the leaſt qualifi-cations to entitle them to ſucceſs, in order to hide their own deficiency. The coward, for inſtance, affects valour, the blockhead knowledge, and the illiterate tradeſman who has made a fortune by plodding, or in ſome illiberal buſineſs, taſte and judgment in the abſtruſeſt purſuits of learned cu-rioſity, in which, as there is no fixed rule to judge by, caprice takes the direction, and opens an ample field for impoſition.

As to the buſineſs of *auctioneering* in general, it owes the greateſt part of that ſucceſs with which my maſter was ſo pleaſed, to another cauſe. The deſire of *buying bargains*, which governs every one who buys any thing, makes people crowd to thoſe places, where things are to be ſold, not, as in the regular courſe of trade, for what they appear to be worth, but for the moſt that can be got for them; and there emulation, dependence on each other's judgment, (" *thoſe people know what they*
" *are doing, and would not bid ſo much, if it was*
" *not*

" *not worth more*"), and the *oratory* of the auctioneer, lead them by inſenſible advances, as their ſpirits riſe, to give prices which they never meant to give, when they begin to *bid*. That great bargains are often got at ſuch places is true; but that is chiefly in a particular branch of the buſineſs, the myſtery of which will be explained to you.

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL's *maſter is viſited by a* CONNOISSEUR, *to whom he gives a ſhort receipt how to make his pictures ſell, and makes ſome ſtriking remarks on the diſregard people ſhow for their families, which ſend his viſitor away in a huff.*

MY maſter was interrupted in his pleaſing meditations by the entrance of a gentleman, the ſight of whom promiſed him the greateſt pleaſure of carrying the ſubject of them into execution. After ſome judicious remarks on the taſte of the town, and the preſent ſtate of *virtu*, in the courſe of which each liberally complimented the other, " Pray, Sir (ſaid the gentleman), " how do pictures ſell this ſeaſon?"

" Never better, Sir (anſwered my maſter); " pictures are every body's money now. A *good* " *maſter* brings any thing; and what is more, I " am convinced they will riſe ſtill higher, ſo that " buyers have no time to loſe. I have a ſale next " week, when you will ſee ſuch prices as will a- " ſtoniſh you. There are ſome things there that

" I know

" I know you will have, let them coſt what they " will, they ſuit your fine collection ſo exactly."

" Why, as to that (replied the gentleman), my " mind is a good deal changed. I have often " taken it into my head lately to part with my " pictures, and have therefore called upon you to " deſire that you will come in the morning, and " let me know what you think they are worth."

" Worth, Sir! they are worth a great deal of " money, which there is not the leaſt danger but " they will bring, if they are managed properly. " There is more, Sir, in the management of a " ſale, much more than moſt people dream of, I " aſſure you."—

" I am ſenſible of that, Sir; and alſo of your " abilities in ſuch management, which you will " have the beſt encouragement to exert on this " occaſion, as I propoſe ſelling the whole to you " together, if we can agree."

This turn came ſo unexpected, that it ſtruck my maſter quite down of the mouth, as he was ſenſible that he had overſhot himſelf, and ſpoiled his market by ſaying ſo much. " It is very un- " lucky, Sir (anſwered he, changing his note di- " rectly), that I did not know your intention " ſooner. I could then have divided them pro- " perly among the ſeveral ſales of the ſeaſon; " but it is now quite too late; this here one next " week is the laſt, and the catalogues for that are " all made out and diſperſed, ſo that there is no " poſſibility of *ſlipping in* a ſingle article. Be- " ſides, the buyers have laid out all their mo- " ney."—

" Slipping in, Sir! I don't underſtand you. " Do not you think my pictures are ſufficient, " both in number and value, to make a ſale by " themſelves?

" themſelves? I am ſure I have more than I have
" once known you make noiſe enough about, *col-*
" *lections* in no reſpect equal to mine. There
" muſt be ſome myſtery in this, which I cannot
" comprehend."

" Very true, Sir; there are myſteries, as you
" obſerve, in all buſineſſes, and perhaps in none
" more than ours."

" I am not enquiring into your myſteries. All
" I deſire to know is, why, after juſt telling me
" that pictures never bore ſo high a price as at
" this time, and that mine could not fail of
" bringing a great deal of money, you ſhould ſo
" ſoon change your opinion."

" Pardon me, Sir, I have not changed my opi-
" nion in the leaſt, and ſhall be very proud to
" ſerve you to the beſt of my abilities, in the
" way of a ſale. But there is a material reaſon
" why I muſt beg to be excuſed in buying them,
" to ſtand the hazard of it myſelf."—

" I ſhould be glad to know what that reaſon
" can be, for I muſt own I cannot conceive it."

" Why, Sir, it is a thing to be ſure that may
" ſeem odd to you; but experience has taught us
" the truth of it. In ſhort, Sir, it is your being
" alive—"

" How! my being alive! What difference can
" my life or death make in the value of my pic-
" tures?"—

" A very great one, Sir, I aſſure you. In all
" the courſe of my buſineſs, I never knew one
" inſtance of a ſale's going *off* well, where the
" owner was living. People conclude that a per-
" ſon parts with pictures either through diſlike
" or neceſſity. The former, you know, depre-
" ciates them at once; nor does the other much

" leſs;

" leſs; as people of faſhion deſpiſe a man, and " every thing belonging to him, the moment it " is known that he is in diſtreſs. Beſides, an " *auctioneer*'s tongue is *tied up* from ſaying any " thing of a perſon's taſte and judgment, and all " that, while he is living, it ſounds ſo fulſome; " and you are ſenſible that a good character of " the *collector* often goes a great way in helping " off a *collection*."

" The beſt thing then for a man to do on ſuch " an occaſion, I preſume, would be to ſhoot him- " ſelf through the head. Hah!"

" Hah! hah! hah! You are pleaſed to jeſt, " Sir; but to be ſure it would be of great advan- " tage. Curioſity brings all the world upon thoſe " occaſions, and then a man has an opportunity " of ſaying ſo many things, as " *that the deceaſ-* " *ed would not take ten times ſo much if he were liv-* " *ing;* or, *that the high price he gave for it cauſed* " *the diſtreſs that made him kill himſelf;* or a thouſand " other ſtriking things of the kind. *I never have ſo* " *much pleaſure as upon thoſe occaſions*, they give a " man ſo much room to ſhow himſelf. Indeed, " if gentlemen conſidered the thing in time, " more of them would take this method of deli- " vering themſelves and their families both from " diſtreſs, and not defer it till all is gone, and the " ſurvivers can make nothing by their death; but " few people take any care for their families now- " o'days. It is a bold puſh, to be ſure; though " not ſo bad as *a man's ſhooting himſelf to win a* " *wager* neither. I ſhould beg your pardon, Sir, " for ſpeaking ſo freely; but, as I know it is not " your caſe, you cannot take offence; though, e- " ven if I thought it was, I would not preſume " to recommend ſuch a thing for the world. E-

" very

" very body is to judge for himſelf. I only give
" you my opinion what effect it would have."
" I underſtand you very well, Sir, (anſwered the
" gentleman, who had much difficulty to hear
" him out), and in return for your opinion will
" give you my advice, which is, to conſider bet-
" ter whom you ſpeak to in this inſolent manner
" another time, for fear of receiving ſuch chaſ-
" tiſement as contempt alone prevents my giving
" you this moment."——On ſaying which words, he turned about and left the room.

CHAP. XVIII.

CHRYSAL's *maſter receives an agreeable ſummons. His encomiums on the generoſity of merchants. An account of the way many of them acquire reputation for taſte and judgment. He meets the merchant, who conſults him on a different branch of his buſineſs, from that which he expected.* CHRYSAL's *maſter, in order to encourage his cuſtomer, gives a large account of his own abilities, and opens ſome curious ſecrets in his buſineſs. A bargain is ſtruck, to the mutual ſatisfaction of both parties; and* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice for that of the merchant.*

WELL as my maſter was accuſtomed to rebukes, there was ſomething in the nature of this, which diſconcerted him ſo much, that he had not power to make the gentleman any reply. But he was ſoon relieved from the trepidation into which it threw him, by a meſſage from an eminent merchant to meet him directly at a neighbouring

bouring tavern. "Aye," (ſaid he, adjuſting his wig at the glaſs, and putting on his cloak) "this "is the thing! There is ſome difference between "treating with a good ſubſtantial citizen, who "will mind what a man ſays, and your people "of faſhion, who fly into a rage, forſooth, "if they can't have their own way in every "thing. No people part with their money ſo "freely as merchants. They don't ſtand higgling "and criticiſing like the others. All they re-"quire is to be aſked a good price, and then they "think a thing muſt be good of courſe. Many a "time have I got five times more from a mer-"chant, than I dared to have aſked from a duke. "I ſuppoſe he wants to ſhew his taſte next week "at the ſale, and has ſent for me tell him which "are the beſt pieces, and how much he may bid "for them. He is not the firſt citizen whom my "inſtructions have made paſs for a man of taſte "and judgment. I love ſuch pupils, they pay ſo "well for their learning; and that more ways "than one, for they buy what nobody elſe would "bid for; *it is only ſlipping a puffer or two of qua-"lity* at them, *enough of whom come ſharking at "every ſale for that purpoſe only*, and they may be "raiſed to any price. No people part with their "money like merchants."

When he came to the tavern, he found the merchant waiting for him. After the compliments common upon ſuch occaſions were politely interchanged, "I deſired to ſee you," (ſaid the merchant, proceeding to buſineſs, though not without evident confuſion) "on an affair that will "convince you of my confidence in your abilities "and honour. Trade, as you know, has been ſo "dead ſome time paſt, that there is no getting

"in

" in a penny of money without tearing people to
" pieces. Now, as I had rather ſuffer ſomething
" myſelf, than oppreſs any honeſt man till he can
" bring his affairs about, I ſhould be glad to diſ-
" poſe of ſome parcel of goods, even under their
" value, to raiſe money for preſent occaſions, that
" is, provided it can be done in ſuch a manner as
" not to be known, as ſuch a thing might injure
" a man's credit."

" Dear Sir," (anſwered my maſter, whoſe heart leaped with joy at the mention of ſuch an affair) " never fear that; I'll engage to manage it ſo, " that if every one who knows you, were to watch, " they'd never even ſuſpect the leaſt of the mat-
" ter. There is nothing eaſier, nor more com-
" mon in the way of buſineſs; and it luckily hap-
" pens, that I have the fineſt opportunity, at this
" very time, that ever I had in my life. I have a
" large ſale under a commiſſion the very week
" after next, into which I can *hedge* a thouſand
" or two with the greateſt eaſe and ſafety. As-
" ſigners never take notice of ſuch things. We
" underſtand one another better than that. Many
" a worthy man have I enabled to hold his head
" above water, for years, by this method. To
" be ſure it muſt have an end ſome time, but then
" a man ſtands in fortune's way for a lucky hit,
" you know; and not only that, but alſo makes
" ſure of ſo much good living in the mean time,
" and can be no worſe at the laſt; and then, when
" all comes to all, and there muſt be a *blow-up*,
" it gives him an opportunity of ſecuring ſome-
" thing againſt a rainy day, as the ſaying is. As
" for its being diſcovered, there are ways enough
" to prevent that. *It is but entering them as ſold,*
" *and I'll find a buyer that ſhall never be heard more*

" *of.* Lord, Sir, if it was not for things of this " kind, our buſineſs would be nothing to what it " is. Half the ſales you ſee every day in the pa- " pers, are made up in this manner."

" Well, Sir," (replied the merchant, who had liſtened to him with attention, and ſeemed great- ly affected at ſome part of what he ſaid) " I pre- " ſume you underſtand your buſineſs, and as I " have no doubt of your honour, I ſhall leave the " whole entirely to your management. Here is " an account of the particulars which I want to " diſpoſe of at this time. They are in a private " warehouſe, whither I have had them conveyed " to be ready for the purpoſe, of which this is " the key; and here is a bill of ſale, which I will " execute directly, as I have occaſion for two " thouſand pounds this very evening. You ſee " there is value, more than ſufficient for double " that ſum, as you will be a better judge when " you ſee the goods; but the reſt can *ſtand for-* " *ward* till they are diſpoſed of, and the account " made up."

" Really, Sir, I ſhould be extremely glad to " ſerve you, but I fear I have not ſo much caſh " by me. However, if you pleaſe, I'll go with " you and look at the goods, and then I'll ſtep " home, and try what I can do."

Accordihgly away they went together to the warehouſe, where my maſter, being ſatisfied with the value of the goods, left the merchant, and hied him home directly with a joyful heart for the money.

" So!" (ſaid he to himſelf, as he went a- long) " I thought what things would come to in " the end! His coach, and country houſe! his " wife's routs, and his own kept miſtreſs, have " made

" made quick work with him. I believe ſuch " men muſt imagine the reſt of the world to be " blind, or they would never go on at ſuch a " rate. I ſuppoſe he's preparing for a place in " the *Gazette* to-morrow, or next day. But that " is no affair of mine. I'll take care to make a " ſafe bargain for myſelf, and let him look to the " reſt. *I am not to ſwear for him.* Of all the " buſineſs in our way, I like this the beſt. A " man can make up what account he pleaſes, " without danger of its being diſputed with him. " All here is ſnug and ſecure. If I could get " but jobs enough of this kind, I'd let who would " chaffer for *toys* and *daubings* with people of " quality, who often *outſharp* us, in ſpite of all " our experience."

By this time he reached home, where he ſoon made up the money, with the help of that and the former day's ſale, without heſitating a moment at its not being his own; and, taking with him proper perſons to *atteſt* his bargain, and *new locks* to make ſure of it, returned to the merchant, with whom he ſoon concluded every thing without ſcruple or delay on either ſide; and then paying him on the ſpot in bank-notes and caſh, *(among the latter of which I was)* ſent him away as well ſatisfied as he himſelf ſtaid behind.

CHAP. XIX.

Motive of CHRYSAL*'s new maſter for making ſuch a bargain, with the many and great advantages a merchant may make of being in the houſe. A ſhort ſketch of an election. The curious method which* CHRYSAL*'s maſter took to evade the laws againſt bribery. He takes offence at the unreaſonable preſumption of his conſtituents, and reſolves to make the moſt of the bargain he has bought from them, which, by a ſingular piece of management, he propoſes to make cheaper than they think.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice for that of the idol of an inn. The conſequences of electioneering. Some account of* CHRYSAL*'s new miſtreſs. He quits her ſervice for a curious purpoſe. An expedient to prevent the ſale of poiſon for mind and body.* CHRYSAL *again changes his ſervice.*

WHEN a man has fixed his mind upon gaining a particular end, he ſlights any inconveniences which may attend the means. Though my *new* maſter was ſenſible of the loſs he muſt ſuffer by his bargain, the proſpect of accompliſhing the purpoſe for which he made it, prevented its giving him any concern.

As ſoon as he got home, he gave orders to have his *equipage* made ready for a journey into the country early next morning, and then retiring into his cloſet for a few moments before he went to bed, "At length," (ſaid he, with a look of ſelf-congratulation) "I ſhall compaſs what I have ſo "long ſet my heart upon. What an advantage "is it to a merchant to be in the houſe! I can "laugh at *bailiffs* and *bankruptcies* for five years

"at

" at leaſt; and, in the mean time, I ſhall have a " thouſand opportunities of making my fortune " by puſhing boldly *in the alley*, now that all fears " of the immediate conſequences are over, or " getting beneficial *contracts* with the govern- " ment, or at leaſt ſome genteel and profitable " employment under it. A merchant may make " many advantages of being in the houſe! Con- " found that prating fellow! I was once afraid " that he *ſmoaked* my deſign, he came ſo near " ſome unlucky circumſtances; but it was above " his *cut*. All his ſchemes are common and low- " lived. This of mine is a maſter-ſtroke. It is " *playing deep*, to be ſure. Fifteen hundred for " my ſeat; and what with other expences, and " the loſs upon this night's work, as much more. " It is playing damn'd deep, but it is too late to " think of that now. I have *ſported* many thou- " ſands upon a worſe chance in my time. At " any rate, I can laugh at *bailiffs* and *bankruptcies* " for five years at leaſt: what an advantage is it " to a merchant to be in the houſe!"

Saying this, he went to bed, where the advantages of being in the houſe ſtill ran ſo ſtrongly in his head, that he dreamed of nothing all night but *bullying creditors, and cringing to miniſters*, doing *jobs*, and getting *contracts, places and penſions*.

In purſuance of his ſcheme, he ſet out next morning with a ſplendid retinue for the borough he had in view, where he managed matters with ſuch judgment and generoſity, keeping the whole town drunk from the moment he arrived, *according to the policy which permits a candidate to deprive his electors of their ſenſes, in order to enable them to judge better of his legiſlative abilities*, that he was elected in preference to a gentleman, the muniſi-

cence of whoſe family had for many generations been the chief ſupport of the place, and who himſelf ſpent his ample fortune in hoſpitality and beneficence in it, but diſdained to buy the votes of a venal crew on this occaſion.

As ſuch a competitor naturally had every man of worth and honour in his intereſt, it had been neceſſary for my maſter to proceed with the utmoſt care and circumſpection. Accordingly, inſtead of *directly giving* his voters money, he *lent* them the prices ſtipulated, on the *ſecurity* of their *notes of hand*, payable in a certain time; an expedient, in which he had a farther view than barely evading the laws againſt ſuch practices.

Every thing being concluded, he was preparing to depart in triumph, when his *conſtituents* waited upon him in form, with certain *inſtructions* for executing the *truſt* they had *thus repoſed* in him. Though he looked upon this as ſuch a bare-faced piece of inſolence that he ſcarce knew how to bear it, yet as he had not yet taken his ſeat, he received their *commands* with the politeſt *humility*, and promiſed the moſt faithful obedience to them. But they were no ſooner out of his ſight, than he changed his note: "Impudent, unreaſonable "ſcoundrels! (ſaid he to himſelf, giving vent to "his indignation, as he walked back and for-"ward in the room), to talk of having repoſed "your truſt in me, and pretend to give me in-"ſtructions! I have *bought you*, and I will *ſell* you "to the beſt bidder, if he were the *devil*; and a "bad bargain he will have of you, if he buys you "as dear as I have. Though I have a ſtroke in "my head to bring myſelf home, that you little "think of. Theſe notes of hand, which you "thought I took only to evade the law, ſhall be

"paid

" paid to the laſt farthing, if I am not *choſen for* " *nothing* next election. You ſhall find you " have no fool to deal with."

Juſt as he ſaid this, he received notice that his coach was ready; and the landlord's daughter coming to wiſh him a good journey, he ſaluted her politely, and ſlipping a couple of guineas *(one of which I was)* into her hand to buy a ribbon, left the houſe like a man of honour.

I have not entered particularly into the circumſtances of electioneering. They are too groſs to give pleaſure, and too well known to require repetition even to you. The effects, I mean immediately in the place, were ſuch as reaſon may ſuggeſt to you. The electors, inſtead of making any advantage of the price, for which they had thus literally ſold their conſciences, liberties, and properties, continued to wallow in drunkenneſs till every penny of it was ſpent, after which it was ſo long before they could ſettle rightly to work again, that it required a year's hard labour and ſtarving to repair what they ſuffered by this *bout* of exceſs and idleneſs.

My *new* miſtreſs was what is not unjuſtly called *the idol of an inn.* Endowed by nature with prettineſs enough to entitle her to flattery, and ſufficient *pertneſs* to make her a coquet, on her return from a *boarding-ſchool*, where her natural talents were ſo well improved by education, that ſhe was thought fit to try her fortune in the world, ſhe took her place in the *bar*, and flirted away with every gentleman that came to the houſe, in hopes of taking in ſome one of the number for marriage, as others in her way had done.

The firſt paſſion of the female heart is for *finery*, to the gratification of which girls ſeldom fail

fail to apply all the money in their power. But though my miſtreſs was very far from being inſenſible to this paſſion, another ſcarce leſs powerful with the ſex, took place of it at this time, which was curioſity.

A young officer, who had lately been quartered in the houſe, and made warm addreſſes to her, had ſaid ſo many fine things in praiſe of a certain book called *M—— of a L—— of P——*, that ſhe reſolved to ſee it, and for that purpoſe applied to a *circulating library* in the town, the keeper of which told her, it was ſo *ſcarce* and *valuable* a book, that he could not poſſibly procure it for her under a guinea.

High as this price was, ſhe would have found means to raiſe it, ſo ſtrong was her curioſity, had not the hurry of the *election*, which juſt then came on, taken up all her time. But every obſtacle was now removed; and the very evening I came into her poſſeſſion, ſhe muffled herſelf up in one of the maid's cloaks, and went for it as ſoon as it was dark, *when I was the purchaſe of her extraordinary bargain.*

I ſee you are ſhocked at the diſhoneſty and wickedneſs of my *new* maſter, for hiring out at ſuch a price, or indeed at any price at all, a book, whoſe obvious deſign (and which it is too well calculated to accompliſh) is to ſupplant every principle of virtue in the youthful mind. But the blame reſts not ſolely upon him. The excuſe which the poet puts into the mouth of the apothecary for ſelling poiſon, that "*his poverty, but not* "*his will conſented,*" may with equal juſtice be alleged in palliation of a poor bookſeller's vending impious or immoral books, the poiſon of the mind.

For

For this reaſon, as no penalty, however ſevere, may be ſufficient to combat that neceſſity, the moſt effectual way to prevent the vending of *either poiſon*, would be abſolutely to prohibit all thoſe whoſe poverty might ſubject them to ſuch temptation, from trading in *books* or *drugs* of any kind; as it is moſt certain, that if there were neither *poor apothecaries nor poor bookſellers*, the ſale of both vicious books and noxious drugs would be much leſs extenſive than it is, if it could not be totally ſuppreſſed, there being very few of the human ſpecies ſo entirely given up to a reprobate ſenſe, as to murder either the ſoul or body of a fellow creature, merely for the pleaſure of doing it.

It may be judged that I did not remain long in the ſervice of this maſter. The next morning after I came into his poſſeſſion, he came to *London*, where he laid out all the money he had in the purchaſe of a parcel of ſuch books as he thought moſt likely to ſuit the taſte of his cuſtomers, without regard either to virtue or religion, *on which occaſion I changed his ſervice for that of his bookſeller.*

CHAP. XX.

Account of CHRYSAL's *new maſter. His heroic ſpirit and reſolution to puſh for a penſion or pillory. Meeting between him and a poet, who turns the tables upon him. A curious method of forming a judgment of a work of genius.* CHRYSAL's *maſter is beaten out of all his art, and for once buys a book by quality not quantity. The value of an author's name.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

MY *new* maſter was one of thoſe aſpiring geniuſes,

geniuſes, whom deſperate circumſtances drive to puſh at every thing, and court conſequences, the bare apprehenſion of which terrifies men, who have ſome character and fortune to loſe, out of their ſenſes. He was that evening to meet at a tavern an author, the boldneſs and beauty of whoſe writings had for ſome time engaged the public attention in a particular manner, and made his numerous admirers tremble for his ſafety.

As he happened to out-ſtay his time, my maſter's importance took offence at a freedom which he thought ſo much out of character. "This is "very pretty truly! (ſaid he, walking back "and forward in a chafe), that I ſhould wait an "hour for an author. It was his buſineſs to "have been here firſt, and waited for me; but "he is ſo puffed up of late, that he has quite for-"got himſelf. *Bookſellers ſeldom meet with ſuch "inſolence from authors.* I ſhould ſerve him right "to go away and diſappoint him. But would "not that diſappoint myſelf more? He is come "into ſuch vogue lately, that the beſt man in the "trade would be glad to get him. Well, if he "does not do what I want, I know not who can. "Fools may be frighted at the thoughts of a "*cart's tail* or a *pillory*, I know better things. "Where they come in a popular cauſe, nothing "ſets a man's name up to ſuch advantage, and "that is the firſt ſtep towards making a fortune. "As for the danger, it is only a mere bug-bear, "while the mob is on my ſide. And therefore "I'll go on without fear, if I am not bought off. "A *penſion* or a *pillory* is the word."

Theſe heroic meditations were interrupted by the entrance of the author, who, throwing himſelf careleſsly into a chair, "I believe I have made "you

"you wait (ſaid he); but I could not help it. I was "obliged to ſtay to kick a puppy of a printer, who "had been impertinent. I am to meet com- "pany directly, ſo let me hear what you have to "ſay."

"I thought, Sir, (anſwered my maſter, with an "air of offended importance), you had appointed "me to meet you here on buſineſs; and buſineſs "you know cannot be hurried over ſo ſoon."

"Don't mention buſineſs to me! I hate the very "name of it; and as to any that can poſſibly be "between you and me, it may be done in five "minutes, as well as five years; ſo ſpeak directly, "and without farther preamble; for all your fi- "neſſes could have no effect upon me, even if I "would ſubmit to let you try them."

"Fineſſes, Sir! I don't know what you mean! "I defie the world to charge me with having ever "been guilty of any. The buſineſs I deſired to "meet you upon, was about *a poem*, I was in- "formed you had ready for the preſs, and which "I ſhould be glad to treat with you for."

"Well, Sir! and what will you give me for it? "Be quick; for I cannot wait to make many "words."

"What! before I have ſeen it! It is impoſſible "for me to ſay, till I have looked it over, and can "judge what it is, and *how much it will make.*"

"As to your judging *what it is*, that muſt de- "pend upon inſpiration, which I imagine you will "ſcarcely make pretence to, till you turn *Methodiſt* "at leaſt; but for what it will make, here it is; "and you may judge of that, while I go down "ſtairs for a few minutes."—Saying which, he gave him an handful of looſe papers, and left the room.

The

The firſt thing my maſter did, when leſt thus to form his judgment of a work of genius, was to *number* the pages, and *then the lines in a page or two*, by the time he had done which the author returned, and taking the papers out of his hand, "Well, Sir, (ſaid he) and what is the reſult of "your judgment?"

"Why really, Sir, (anſwered my maſter, after "ſome pauſe) I hardly know what to ſay. I have "*caſt off the copy*, and do not think it will *make* "*more than a ſhilling*, however pompouſly print-"ed."

"What you think it will make, is not the mat-"ter; but what will you give me for it? I ſell my "works by the *quality*, not the *quantity*."

"I do not doubt the quality of them in the "leaſt; but conſidering how much the trade is "over-ſtocked at preſent, and what a *mere drug* "poetry has long been, I am a good deal at a loſs "what to offer, as I ſhould be unwilling to give "you or any gentleman offence, by ſeeming to un-"dervalue your works. What do you think of "five guineas? I do not imagine that more can "be given for ſo little; nor indeed ſhould I be "fond of giving even that, but in compliment to "you: I have had full twice as much for two, "many a time."

"Much good may your bargain do you, Sir; "but I will not take leſs than fifty for mine, in "compliment to you, or any bookſeller alive; and "ſo, Sir, I deſire to know, without more words, "(for I told you before, that your eloquence would "be thrown away upon me!) whether you will "give that, as I am in haſte to go to company "much more agreeable to me than your's."

"What,

"What, Sir! fifty guineas, for ſcarce five hun-
"dred lines! ſuch a thing was never heard of in
"the trade."

"Confound your trade, and you together!
"Here, waiter! what's to pay?"

"But, dear Sir! why will you be in ſuch an
"hurry? Can you not give yourſelf and me time
"to conſider a little? Perhaps we might come
"nearer to each other."

"I have told you before, and I repeat it to you
"again, that I will have ſo much; and that without
"more words."

"You are very peremptory, Sir; but *you know*
"*your own value;* and therefore, in hopes you will
"let me have more for my money next time, I
"will venture to give you your price now;
"though really if it was not for your *name*, I
"could not poſſibly do it; but to be ſure *that is*
"*worth a ſhilling extraordinary, I own.*"

"Which is twelve pence more than your's ever
"will be, unleſs to the *Ordinary of Newgate*. But
"come! give me the money! I want to go to my
"company."

"Well, Sir! this is an haſty bargain; but I
"take it upon your word; and don't doubt but
"there is merit in it, to anſwer ſuch a price.
"Satire, Sir! keen ſatire, and ſo plain, that *he*
"*who runs may read*, as the ſaying is, is the thing
"now-o'days. Where there is any doubt or diffi-
"culty in the application, it takes off the pleaſure
"from the generality of readers, who will ſcarce
"be ſatisfied with leſs than the very name. That,
"Sir, is your great merit. Satire muſt be per-
"ſonal, or it will never do."

"Perſonal! that mine never ſhall be. *Vices*,
"not *perſons*, are the objects of my ſatire, though

" where I find the former, I never ſpare the lat-
" ter, be the rank and character of life what it
" will."

My maſter had by this time counted out the money, (*among which I was*) which the author took without telling over, and then went to his company, leaving the bookſeller ſcarcely more pleaſed with his bargain, than mortified at the cavalier treatment he had met in making it.

CHAP. XXI.

Some account of the company to which CHRYSAL's *new maſter went. His behaviour to a young female, who accoſted him in his way home. He takes her to a tavern for an uncommon purpoſe, where he treats her uncommonly, and goes home with her from as uncommon a motive. Account of what he ſaw in her habitation, with the manner in which he behaved there. He takes another lodging for the whole family, where he leaves them abruptly, to ſave himſelf and them trouble.*

THE company, to which my *new* maſter was in ſuch haſte to go, conſiſted of a few perſons, whom a ſimilarity of temper had linked in the cloſeſt intimacy. With theſe he ſpent the remainder of the evening, in a manner which few would diſlike, though fewer ſtill could approve it. The ſpirited wit, and livelineſs of their converſation, gilded the groſſeſt debaucheries; at the ſame time, that the rectitude and ſublimity of their ſentiments, whenever their hearts could find opportunity

portunity to ſpeak, made the vices of their practice ſtill more horrible by the contraſt.

They *broke* not up, as it might be imagined, till nature ſunk under their exceſſes, when my maſter, as he ſtaggered home, was accoſted by a female, who had ſomething in her air and manner ſo different from thoſe *outcaſts* of humanity, who offer themſelves to caſual proſtitution in the ſtreets, that his curioſity was ſtruck, and he ſtopped to take more particular notice of her. She appeared to be about fifteen. Her figure was elegant, and her features regular; but want had ſicklied o'er their beauty; and all the horrors of deſpair gloomed through the languid ſmile ſhe forced, when ſhe addreſſed him.

The ſigh of diſtreſs, which never ſtruck his ear without affecting his heart, came with double force from ſuch an object. He viewed her with ſilent compaſſion for ſome moments; and reaching her a piece of gold, bade her go home, and ſhelter herſelf from the inclemencies of the night, at ſo late an hour. Her ſurpriſe and joy at ſuch unexpected charity overpowered her. She dropped upon her knees, in the wet and dirt of the ſtreet, and raiſing her hands and eyes toward heaven, remained in that poſture for ſome moments, unable to give utterance to the gratitude that filled her heart.

Such a ſight was more expreſſive than all the powers of eloquence. He raiſed her tenderly from the ground, and ſoothing her with words of comfort, offered to conduct her to ſome place, where ſhe might get that refreſhment of which ſhe appeared to be in too great want. "O! Sir, (ſaid ſhe, "preſſing the hand that had raiſed her, with her "cold trembling lips) my deliverer, ſent by hea-

"ven to ſave me from deſpair! let me not think "of taking refreſhment myſelf, till I have firſt "procured it for thoſe, whoſe greater wants I "feel ten thouſand times more ſeverely than my "own."

"Who can they be? (interrupted he with an-"xious impatience) Can humanity feel greater "wants, than thoſe under which you are ſink-"ing?"

"My father (exclaimed ſhe, burſting into tears) "languiſhing under infirmities acquired in the "ſervice of his country; my mother, worn out "with attending on him, and both periſhing for "want, (heaven grant they are not already dead!) "together with two infant brothers, inſenſible of "the cauſe of their diſtreſs, and crying to them "for a morſel of bread, which it is not in their "power to give."

"Where can ſuch a ſcene of wretchedneſs be "hidden from relief? I'll go with you myſelf di-"rectly! but ſtop! let us firſt procure ſome com-"fortable nouriſhment from ſome of the houſes, "which are kept open at this late hour, for a very "different purpoſe. Come with me! we have no "time to loſe."——With theſe words, he went directly to a tavern, and enquiring what victuals were dreſſed in the houſe, loaded her with as much as ſhe could carry of the beſt, and putting a couple of bottles of wine in his own pocket, walked with her to her habitation, which was in a blind alley, happily for her, not very far diſtant, as weakneſs, together with the conflict of paſſions ſtruggling in her heart, made her ſcarce able to go.

When they came to the door, ſhe would have gone up firſt for a light, but he was reſolved to accompany her, that he might ſee the whole ſcene

"in

in its genuine colours. He therefore followed her up to the top of the houſe, where, opening the door of the garret, ſhe diſcovered to him ſuch a ſcene of miſery, as ſtruck him with aſtoniſhment. By the light of a lamp, that glimmered in the fireleſs chimney, he ſaw lying on a bare bedſtead, without any other covering than the relics of their own rags, a man, a woman, and two children, ſhuddering with cold, though huddled together, to ſhare the little warmth which exhauſted nature ſtill ſupplied them with.

While he ſtood gazing in horror at ſuch complicated wretchedneſs, his conductreſs ran to the bed-ſide, and, falling on her knees, "O! Sir! "Madam! (exclaimed ſhe in rapture,) ariſe! I "have got relief from an angel of heaven!"—

"Take care! (anſwered a voice, the hollow "trembling of which was ſharpened with indig-"nation) take care it is not from a fiend of hell, "who has taken advantage of your diſtreſs to "tempt you to ruin! for with whom elſe could "you be till this time of night? But know, "wretched girl, that I will never eat the earn-"ings of vice and infamy. A few hours will "put an end to my miſeries, which have receiv-"ed the only poſſible addition, by this your folly."

"He muſt be ſuch indeed, (interrupted my ma-"ſter, ſtill more ſtruck with ſentiments ſo un-"common in ſuch a ſituation), who could think "of tempting her, in ſuch circumſtances, to any "folly. I will withdraw, while you ariſe, and "then we will conſult what can be ſooneſt done, "to alleviate a diſtreſs of which you appear ſo "undeſerving."——While he ſaid this, he took the wine out of his pockets, and giving it to the daughter, went directly down ſtairs, without wait-

ing for a reply, and, walking backward and forward in the ſtreet for ſome time, enjoyed the ſublimeſt pleaſure the human heart is capable of, in conſidering how he had relieved, and ſhould farther relieve, the ſufferings of objects ſo worthy of relief.

By the time he thought they might have learned from their daughter the circumſtances of her meeting with him, and taken ſome nouriſhment, he returned to them, when, the moment he entered the room, the whole family fell upon their knees to thank him. Such humiliation was more than he could bear. He raiſed them, one by one, as faſt as he could, and, taking the father's hand, "Gracious God! (ſaid he) can a ſenſe of humanity be ſuch an uncommon thing among creatures who call themſelves human, that ſo poor an exertion of it ſhould be thought deſerving of a return, proper to be made only to Heaven? Oppreſs me not, Sir, I conjure you, with the mention of what it would have been a crime, I could never have forgiven myſelf, to have known I had not done. It is too late to think of leaving this place before to-morrow, when I will provide a better, if there is not any to which you chooſe particularly to go. I am not rich; but thank Heaven, that it has bleſſed me with ability and inclination to afford ſuch aſſiſtance as may be immediately neceſſary to you, till means may be thought of for doing more."

"O Sir, (anſwered the mother), well might my daughter call you an angel of heaven! You know not from what miſery you have already relieved——"

"Nor will I know more of it at this time, (interrupted my maſter), than that which I

"too

"too plainly ſee. I will leave you now to your "reſt, and return as ſoon as it is day."

"Speak not of leaving us, Sir, (exclaimed the "daughter, who was afraid that if he ſhould go "away, he might not return), what reſt can we "take in ſo ſhort a time? Leave us not, I be- "ſeech you! leave us not in this place!——"

"Ceaſe, my child! (interrupted the father), "nor preſs your benefactor to continue in a ſcene "of miſery that muſt give pain to his humane "heart."——

"If my ſtaying will not give you pain, (an- "ſwered my maſter), I will moſt willingly ſtay; "but it muſt be on condition that our converſa- "tion point entirely forward to happier days. "There will be time enough hereafter to look "back."——

Saying this, he ſat down on the bed-ſide, (for other ſeat the apartment afforded none), between the huſband and wife, with whom he ſpent the little remainder of the night, in ſuch diſcourſe as he thought moſt likely to divert their attention from their preſent miſery, and inſpire their minds with better hopes, while the children, all but the daughter, who hung upon his words, comforted at heart with a better meal than they had long taſted, fell faſt aſleep, as they leaned their heads upon their mother's lap.

As ſoon as it was day, "Now, Madam, (ſaid "my maſter, addreſſing himſelf to the mother), "I will go and provide a place for your reception, "as you ſay all places are alike to you. In the "mean time, accept of this trifle (giving her ten "guineas) to provide ſuch neceſſaries as you may "indiſpenſibly want before you remove. When "you are ſettled, we will ſee what farther can

"be

" be done. I ſhall be back with you within theſe " three hours at moſt."

For ſuch beneficence there was no poſſibility of returning thanks; but their hearts ſpoke through their eyes, in a language ſufficiently intelligible to his. Departing directly, to ſave both himſelf and them the pain of purſuing a converſation that grew too diſtreſsful, he went, without regard to change of dreſs or appearance, to look for a proper lodging for them, where he laid in ſuch proviſions of every kind, as he knew they muſt immediately want. This care employed him till the time he had promiſed to return, when he found ſuch an alteration in the looks and appearance of them all, as gave his heart delight.

" You ſee, Sir, (ſaid the mother, as ſoon as he " entered), the effects of your bounty; but do " not think that vanity has made us abuſe it. " Theſe clothes, what we could raiſe on which, " has for ſome time been our ſole ſupport, were " the purchaſe of happier times, and were now " *redeemed* for much leſs than we muſt have given " for the worſt we could buy."

" Dear Madam, (interrupted my maſter, taking " her hand reſpectfully), mention not any thing " of the kind to me, I beſeech you. You will " ſoon ſee ſuch times again." Then turning to the huſband, " I have taken a lodging, Sir; (con- " tinued he) it is convenient, but not large, as I " imagined would be your choice. I will call a " coach to take us to it directly. If there are " any demands here, let the people of the houſe " be called up, and they ſhall be paid. I will be " your purſe-bearer for the preſent."

" No, Sir, (replied the huſband), there are not " any. You have enabled us to diſcharge all de-

" mands

" mands upon us. People in our circumſtances
" cannot find credit, becauſe they want it."

My maſter would then have gone for a coach, but the daughter inſiſted on ſaving him that trouble; upon which he put the whole family into it, and walked away before them to their new lodging. It is impoſſible to deſcribe what theſe poor people felt, when they ſaw the proviſion he had made for their reception. The father, in particular, could not bear it, but, ſinking into a chair, " This is too much! (ſaid he, as ſoon as a flood
" of tears had given vent to the fullneſs of his
" heart); this is too much. Support me, gra-
" cious Heaven! who has ſent this beſt of men
" to my relief; ſupport me under the weight of
" obligations, which the preſervation of theſe a-
" lone (looking round upon his wife and children)
" could induce me to accept."——Then, addreſſing himſelf to my maſter, " My heart is not un-
" thankful, (continued he), but gratitude in ſuch
" exceſs as mine, where there is no proſpect of
" ever making a return, is the ſevereſt pain."

My maſter, who ſought none, attempted often to give the converſation another turn; but, finding that they could ſpeak or think of nothing elſe as yet, he took his leave, promiſing to come the next day, when their minds ſhould be better ſettled, to conſult what more was in his power to ſerve them, having firſt privately taken an opportunity to ſlip a couple of guineas into the daughter's hand, to avoid putting the delicacy of her father and mother to farther pain.

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

CHRYSAL *gives ſome account of his maſter. Reaſon of his having been bred to, and miſcarried in a particular profeſſion. Intereſting remarks on the different kinds of merit neceſſary to eminence in different profeſſions, confirmed by ſtriking inſtances of their ſucceſs in each. Natural conſequence of his being forced into a profeſſion againſt his inclination. He is compelled by diſtreſs to exert his abilities. Contradiction in his character, and the particular turn of his works accounted for. He viſits his new family. Affecting ſtory of an officer.*

FATIGUED in mind and body, from the debauch of the evening before, and the height to which his tendereſt paſſions had been wound up by ſuch a moving ſcene, my maſter went directly home, and throwing himſelf on the bed, ſlept till next morning, without diſturbance from pain or reflection.

The contradictions which I had ſeen in his character, prompted my curioſity to take this opportunity of looking back to his paſt life, to try if, in the occurrences of that, I could trace their cauſe. Born in the middle rank of life, his parents were induced, by the dawnings of uncommon genius which he diſcovered in his earlieſt youth, to give him ſuch an education as might enable him to make that figure in ſome of the learned

learned profeſſions, for which, paternal fondneſs flattered them, that nature had deſigned him.

But however greatly he profited by his education, the end propoſed by it was far from being pleaſing to his inclinations, which the vigour of his mind and body turned to more active ſcenes. For this reaſon, when he was to quit the purſuits of general learning for thoſe of ſome particular profeſſion, his ardour cooled, and he entirely loſt that ſpirit of emulative ambition which alone can enable a man to arrive at eminence.

Such a falling off could not eſcape the anxious obſervation of his friends; but as it was not in their power either to remedy it, or gratify his inclination in any other way, all they could do was to enter him into the ſervice of religion, a profeſſion in which, though the greateſt abilities and application of the human mind are evidently and indiſpenſibly neceſſary, yet, by the perverſion of man, the leaſt are required.

You ſeem ſhocked at the ſeverity of this remark; but a moment's reflection will open to you the reaſon upon which it is founded. In every other profeſſion, ſucceſs depends upon an opinion of that knowledge which is called *merit* in it, becauſe mankind ſee the neceſſity of ſuch merit to attain the object of the profeſſion. But in the church, the caſe is quite different. Every man thinks that he knows enough of religion to ſerve his own turn, and therefore gives himſelf no trouble about the knowledge of thoſe who profeſs it, as he concludes that knowledge can be of no ſervice to him; and therefore, *ſucceſs in the church depends not on a general opinion of merit, but on particular favour, which, for the reaſon given before, is not the neceſſary conſequence of ſuch merit.* An *attorney* or *ſurgeon*,

ſurgeon, for inſtance, who is not thought to have ſome merit in his profeſſion, will never be employed; but let him by any means get into the church, and curry favour with thoſe in power, and he may riſe to the firſt dignities of it, though he has no more merit in this profeſſion, than he had in that which he was forced to quit for want of bread. And this is the reaſon, why *they who have leaſt abilities for any profeſſion are packed into this*; and why *they again, who have the leaſt of theſe, are generally moſt ſucceſsful in it*; as conſciouſneſs of their want of merit, makes them take moſt pains to gain favour.

The conſequence of his entering into ſuch a profeſſion againſt inclination, is obvious. An indignant ſenſe of his own natural ſuperiority to his ſuperiors in ſtation, made him fall into the too common error of arguing, from the *abuſe*, againſt the *uſe*, and hold in contempt not only them, but alſo the very profeſſion itſelf, in which they could have ſuch ſucceſs, and in which neceſſity alone obliged him to continue. He diſdained to apply abilities which he thought above the end: He neglected duties which he ſaw abuſed; and at length ſunk into a ſtate of liſtleſs indifference, in which he would have died in obſcurity, had not diſtreſs rouzed him, and extorted an exertion of his abilities, which a mind ſoured by diſappointment of its earlieſt hopes, and by domeſtic unhappineſs after, turned to *ſatire*, with an aſperity and ſtrength, that made vice tremble in the boſom of the great, and folly hide her head in the higheſt places.

As this domeſtic unhappineſs was the immediate cauſe of thoſe parts of his conduct which contradicted the general tenor of his character, juſtice requires that ſome account ſhould be given of it.

In

In the capricious levity of youth, he fixed his inclination on a female who had no other recommendation beſide beauty. Prudence would have forbidden a match in which there was ſo little proſpect of happineſs; but men of great abilities too often think it beneath them to liſten to her voice. He married her, though, in the phraſe of the world, evidently to his ruin, the return ſhe made him for which proof of his love, was infidelity to his bed. This is the deepeſt wound that can be given to an heart of any delicacy; it ſharpens the ſting of ingratitude with inſult, by giving a preference that reflects diſhonour. He felt it ſo ſeverely, that deſpair made him ſtrive to drown the ſenſe of it in wine, in the intoxication of which, he too often was guilty of what, in a cooler moment, his reaſon would have bluſhed at, and his principles abhorred; which, as I obſerved, forced him to exert his abilities, which he did with ſuch ſucceſs, as ſoon enabled him to quit a profeſſion that had not been his choice, and at the ſame time indulge the natural diſpoſition of his heart, by practiſing ſome of the ſublimeſt duties of it.

As ſoon as he awoke next day, he went to viſit his *new* family, where the happineſs that gliſtened in every grateful eye at his approach, made him happy. After ſome general chat, "It is my "duty, Sir, (ſaid the father), to give you ſome "account of myſelf, and of the cauſe of my fal-"ling into that depth of miſery from which your "beneficence relieved me, that you ſhould not "think it has been laviſhed on objects altogether "unworthy of it.

"I am deſcended from a good family, the for-"tune of which my father diſſipated in ſupport-"ing

" ing a parliamentary intereſt for the miniſtry,
" the only return he received for which, and for
" his voice upon all occaſions, was a ſmall penſion
" for himſelf, and a pair of colours in the guards
" for me, his only ſon, with promiſes, indeed, of
" farther proviſion, which were all forgotten, when
" he died, happily for himſelf, before the end of
" the parliament, which, as he had no proſpect
" of being returned again, would have left him
" at the mercy of creditors, whom it was not in
" his power to pay.

" Though I was ſoon ſenſible that my beſt hopes
" died with him, I was ſo infatuated to a profeſ-
" ſion, the moſt pleaſing to youthful idleneſs and
" vanity, that I laid out the little fortune of this
" beſt of women, whom I had married in my
" days of better hope, in the purchaſe of a com-
" pany in a marching regiment; at the head of
" which, I flattered myſelf that I ſhould meet
" ſome opportunity, in the war juſt then broke
" out, of meriting farther promotion. But I
" found the vanity of ſuch a thought, when it
" was unhappily too late.

" After ſeveral years careful ſervice, in the
" courſe of which I had ſealed ſome degree of re-
" putation with my blood, in ſeveral warm ac-
" tions, without advantage to myſelf, or proſpect
" of any to my family, who now multiplied the
" cares of life ten thouſand fold upon my head,
" I was driven by deſpair to exchange my com-
" pany, which I had bought, and therefore could
" have ſold again, the price of which would at
" leaſt have kept us from abſolute ſtarving, for an
" higher rank in a younger regiment, juſt then
" ordered upon an expedition, the object of which
" raiſed what was thought rational expectation of

" ſuch

" ſuch profit, as ſhould eaſe me from the anxie-
" ties that made life a burden.

" Allured ſolely by this expectation, I went ac-
" cordingly. The expedition was ſucceſsful. I
" did my duty. I was wounded in the courſe of
" it, to the extreme danger of my life. I entire-
" ly ruined my conſtitution by the ſeverity of the
" climate; and, on my return home, was redu-
" ced to half-pay, without receiving ſo much prize-
" money as defrayed the extraordinary expences
" of the expedition, and of the illneſs which I
" contracted in it; while thoſe above me accu-
" mulated ſuch wealth, as, if divided in any de-
" gree of proportion, would have recompenſed
" the labours of us, who had literally *borne the*
" *heat and burden of the day*, and were now pining
" in diſcontent and miſery, aggravated by a par-
" tiality ſo ſeverely injurious.

" In this ſituation, I reſolved to throw myſelf
" at the feet of my Sovereign, and implore relief
" from the known goodneſs of his heart. But his
" throne was ſurrounded by thoſe whoſe intereſt
" it was to keep the cries of his people from com-
" ing to his ears *; and therefore, as it was ne-
" ceſſary for me to make my errand known, I ne-
" ver could obtain acceſs to him.

" The diſtreſs of this diſappointment was ſtill
" farther heightened by the *delays* in the diſcharge
" of that *half-pay*, which was now my only ſup-
" port; and the *draw-backs* it was ſubject to from
" the *fees of office*, even when it ſhould come to
" be paid, which were ſuch, that when I attempt-

 " ed

* *This reflection*, NOTORIOUSLY SO GROUNDLESS, *is alone ſufficient to vindicate the author from any alluſion to preſent times.*

" ed to mortgage it, the wretch's laſt reſource to " put off ſtarving as long as he can, what I could " get from thoſe *vultures*, who fatten upon the " ſufferings of a ſoldier, was ſcarce ſufficient to " ſatisfy our preſent wants. How then could I " look forward for a family, dearer to me than " life? What could ſupport reſolution, when hope " was gone? Mine was unequal to the trial; and " I was beginning to meditate on putting an end " to a life of ſuch miſery, without conſidering " that the ſufferings of thoſe, for whom I felt ſo " much more than for myſelf, muſt be ſtill made " heavier by ſuch a baſe deſertion of them, when " heaven, in its mercy, viſited my family with a " violent fever, which freed me from farther fears " for the future welfare of my three eldeſt ſons, " and with difficulty ſpared the two, whom you " ſee before you. O! my poor boys! happier! " thrice happier than us whom you left behind! " Excuſe this weakneſs, Sir; Nature will force " the involuntary tear, in ſpite of reaſon: For " were they not the children of my love?

" During their illneſs, I loſt every other care, " in my attendance upon them; nor omitted any " poſſible means to preſerve lives, for which my " fears foreboded nothing but unhappineſs: but " though their deaths freed me from a part of " thoſe fears, they left a melancholy void in my " heart, which was more painful, if poſſible, than " any fear. But I was not long ſenſible of that " pain. My children were ſcarce laid in the " grave, when the fever ſeized myſelf with ſuch " violence, that I ſoon loſt my ſenſes, nor reco- " vered them for above a month; and then only " to feel the greateſt wretchedneſs that was ever " heaped upon human creature.

" The

" The expence of my children's, and my own " illneſs, had not only exhauſted all the money I " had raiſed on the anticipation of my half-pay, " but alſo obliged my wife to mortgage ſeveral of " our beſt effects. Such a reſource never eſcapes " the watchful eyes of people who keep lodging-" houſes. Our landlady no ſooner perceived it, " than ſhe ſeized upon the reſt, and then turned " us out, the moment I could be removed with-" out inſtant death.

" In this ſituation, I muſt have periſhed in the " ſtreet, had not a poor woman, whom my wife " had been obliged to call in to her aſſiſtance " when I ſickened, ſhared with us her habitation, " in which you found us, as ſhe alſo did the earn-" ings of her daily labour, till a chairman, who " was carrying a beau to a ball, threw her down " with ſuch violence, for not making haſte enough " out of his way, that ſhe broke her leg, and was " obliged to be taken to an hoſpital.

" From that time we ſupported life by mortgag-" ing the few clothes we had brought on our " backs, without any ray of hope to tempt us to " look forward, till they alſo were all gone, and " the miſery of cold added to that of hunger. In " this condition, we had been two days without " taſting bread, or feeling the warmth of fire, " calling inceſſantly upon death to put that end to " our diſtreſſes, which a ſenſe of religion, made " ſtronger by my wretchedneſs, now prevented " my daring to haſten, when my daughter ſtole " out, unknown to us, to ſeek for charity in the " ſtreets, where ſhe wandered, without meeting " any thing but inſults, and ſolicitations to vice, " till heaven directed your ſteps to her.

" Such was the reward of more than twenty " years faithful and hard ſervice, in which I had " fought the battles of my country, in the oppo- " ſite extremities of the globe, with honour, and " been inſtrumental in making princely fortunes " for the ſeveral commanders under whom I " ſerved.

" This, Sir, is the ſum of my ſtory, in which " I have been as brief as I could, to avoid giving " you pain. We are now your creatures. The " lives we enjoy are immediately the gift of your " benevolence; a benevolence ſo critically timed, " (for we could not have ſubſiſted many hours " longer without it) as to raiſe an hope, that Pro- " vidence, which ſent you to our relief, will not " leave its work unfiniſhed, but ſave us from fall- " ing again into ſuch miſery, by means agreeable " to its own wiſdom and goodneſs, though im- " poſſible for us, in our preſent ſituation, to fore- " ſee."

It was ſome time before my maſter, who had liſtened to the officer's ſtory with ſympathetic attention, was able to ſpeak. Recovering himſelf at length, " Fear not," (ſaid he, in a broken voice) " never was the righteous forſaken, nor—nor— " nor—I have ſome friends, Sir, who may ſerve " you! In the mean time, take this" (reaching him a bank-note for twenty pounds); " I will not " be refuſed; buſineſs calls me for a few hours; " but I will ſee you again in the evening."— Saying this, he hurried away to hide his emotions, without waiting for a reply, which indeed their gratitude left them not the power to make.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

CHRYSAL's *maſter carries him to viſit an old acquaintance, who behaves in character on hearing the officer's ſtory, and ſurpriſes* CHRYSAL's *maſter with an account of his having turned* PATRIOT. *The general motive for ſuch a ſtep, with ſome remarks on the difference between practice and profeſſion in different inſtances. Inſignificancy of private characters in attacks upon a miniſtry, and why. Reflections on the origin and uſe of* SATIRE, *and the abuſe of the terms* GOOD *and* ILL-NATURE, *with the reaſon why ſo many cry out againſt ſatire.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice in a common way.*

THE moſt intimate acquaintance my maſter had, was the perſon who had been competitor with a former maſter of mine for admiſſion into the *higher order of* THE MOCK-MONASTERY *. To him he went directly, and relating the officer's ſtory while it was ſtill warm in his heart, aſked his aſſiſtance to do ſomething more effectual for his relief.

His friend was ſo affected with the melancholy tale, that it was ſome time before he could ſpeak; but when at length he did, it was in a ſtrain very different from what might have been expected. "And the girl was really ſo pretty!" (ſaid he, with a look of inexpreſſible archneſs) "Well ſaid, "my good *Levite*; I preſume you ſatisfied your "own appetites with her at the tavern, before "you provided for thoſe of her family, though "you *ſunk* that part of the ſtory, for fear I ſhould "want to come in for a *ſnack* with you. The "concu-

* *Vol.* III.

" concupiſcence of you parſons is truly *catholic*,
" whatever your conſciences may be, and would
" engroſs the whole ſex, if it was not reſtrained;
" not indeed that women come within the mean-
" ing of the *Mortmain* acts, as none do more
" good in their generation, and conſequently are
" better repreſented to the ſtate than thoſe who
" are occupied by the clergy."

" Why, what a ſenſual brute muſt you be," (anſwered my maſter) " to talk of ſatisfying ap-
" petites with a wretch juſt periſhing of cold and
" hunger! But it is all affectation. If you had
" been in my place, you would have acted juſt as
" I did; for whatever airs your wicked wit may
" aſſume, I know your heart is ſtrongly ſuſcepti-
" ble of charity."

" Charity! Hah! hah! hah! I expected that.
" It is always the burden of a parſon's ſong.
" They make a cloak of it upon all occaſions; and
" indeed if it will really cover ſins, as they ſay,
" they are in the right to have it ready, for mul-
" titudes enough they have to take up every cor-
" ner of it. But why can you not throw off the
" *cant* along with the *cloth?* However, that her
" hunger ſhould not damp your deſires any more,
" here" (giving him half a dozen guineas) " is
" my help to allay it."

" I will not refuſe your money, for your own
" ſake, in hope that your beſtowing even this
" much ſo well, may help to atone for ſome of
" the thouſands you have thrown away. But it
" was not with any view of getting it, that I ſpoke
" to you. Their immediate neceſſities are ſup-
" plied. I want your aſſiſtance and intereſt——"

—" My intereſt! Hah! hah! hah!—You ap-
" ply to a perſon of great intereſt truly. Why,
" my

" my very naming them would be ſufficient to " ruin their hopes for ever. You don't know, " perhaps, that I have turned *patriot*, and *attack-* " *ed the miniſtry.*"

" Patriot! For heaven's ſake how long, and " on what occaſion have you taken this ſtrange " whim?"

" Whim! Pray, good Sir, ſpeak with more re- " ſpect of the nobleſt principle of the human " heart. The thought came into my head the " night before laſt; and as I do not love to loſe " time, eſpecially in things of ſuch moment, I " gave it vent yeſterday, in the ſhape of a politi- " cal pamphlet, in which I have proved to a de- " monſtration, that the miniſter, and all his friends " and countrymen, are fools and rogues, and de- " ſerve to be hang'd."——

" Is it poſſible that you can be ſerious! What, " in the name of common ſenſe, could be your " motive for taking ſuch a ſtep as this? I thought " you had expectation of favour from them."——

" What motive ſhould any man of honour and " honeſty have but the good of his country, their " neglect of which has rouſed an indignation that " will make them tremble?"

" Or, in other words, they have diſappointed " your expectations, and therefore you take this " method of being revenged on them, and extort- " ing, from fear, what they would not do from fa- " vour, the general motive of modern patriots, I " acknowledge; but with what face you can pre- " tend to the title, proſtituted as it is, I cannot " think, as your very name is a burleſque upon " every thing that is ſerious."——

" Pray, how ſo, reverend and grave Sir? If " the moſt profligate ſinner makes the beſt ſaint,

" as

" as you ſay, why ſhould not a modern rake " make a tolerable politician? I believe you will " hardly attribute it to the ſuperior excellence of " the latter character; but the truth is, though " it is impoſſible for me to profeſs political prin- " ciples more contrary to my practice, than your " *moral* practice is to your preaching, yet you " would deny me the toleration which you avail " yourſelf of, and have my words judged from " my actions, not my actions from my words, as " you expect your own ſhall be.

" But my private character or practice ſignifies " nothing to this undertaking, which is to rip " up the practices and characters public and pri- " vate of a ſet of people who have obtruded them- " ſelves into a ſtation that expoſes them to envy, " and every accuſation againſt whom will there- " fore be received implicitly, without regarding " who, or what the author of it is. Not but " there is ſufficient room to attack thoſe, whoſe " whole private lives have been ſuch a continued " ſeries of vice and folly, and their public con- " duct, of blunders and villany, that it is impoſ- " ſible to ſay or think any thing bad enough of " them, as I have already proved by inconteſtible " inſtances in my pamphlet, and ſhall by many " more in the courſe of the undertaking. If the " tables indeed ſhould turn, and I get into their " place, then they may make the ſame uſe of my " character, and perhaps not without effect; but " at preſent it is quite out of the queſtion. And " now that I have opened myſelf to you, I ex- " pect your aſſiſtance in return for my confi- " dence."——

" Aſſiſtance in politics! It is not in my power " to give you any. I hate from my ſoul every

" political

" political ſyſtem under the ſun, as a jumble of " folly and villany, (I mean as they are carried " into practice, not in their ſpeculative plans) " and therefore never could throw away a thought " upon them."——

" That ſignifies nothing. The aſſiſtance which " I want, you are well qualified to give. While " I detect their political blunders and villany, " you ſhall laſh their private vices and follies, till " we make them equally ridiculous and odious to " every man of ſenſe and virtue in the nation; a " taſk that will give you the pleaſing opportunity " of indulging that *miſanthropy* which inſpires the " muſe of a *ſatiriſt*, and is miſtaken for virtue, " becauſe it rails againſt vice; for, blazon it out " as pompouſly as you will, nothing but *ill-nature* " can make a man take delight in expoſing the " defects of others; and the more forcibly he does " it, the more powerful muſt that principle be " with him."——

" And, by the ſame rule, it is *good-nature* that " makes a man fawn upon folly, and flatter vice; " and conſequently, whoever does it is virtuous. " A moſt judicious way of reaſoning truly! Now, " on the contrary, I think it a much more juſt con- " cluſion, that they who treat vice with tenderneſs, " approve it in their hearts, and would practiſe " it, if they could; and that they, who expoſe its " deformities and dangers, really deteſt it, though " they may ſometimes, through human weak- " neſs, fall into the practice. But I do not won- " der at your remark; it is an old, and common " one. All, who are conſcious that they deſerve " the laſh, deſire to leſſen its force; and there- " fore derive ſatire from ill-nature, in order to " obviate the application of it to the proper ob-

" ject,

" ject, and faſten, upon the ſatiriſt, the fault " which is in themſelves. And this abuſe of the " terms *good* and *ill-nature*, is the reaſon why " ſome have been provoked to call the former " *folly*.

" But, not to waſte time in diſcuſſions where " prejudice only can find a doubt, I agree to " your propoſal with pleaſure, and will hold folly " up to ridicule, and brand vice to deteſtation, " wherever you point them out to me, without " regard to the rank or power of the perſon, or to " any imputations of *miſanthropy* and *ill-nature* " which may be levelled at myſelf, to ſhield a- " gainſt and blunt the edge of my ſatire; though " I no more expect that I ſhall be able to reform " the *moral*, than you the *political* conduct of the " age. However, it is a duty to make the at- " tempt, be the ſucceſs what it will. But, by " the by, are you not apprehenſive that your un- " dertaking may be attended with danger? The " people in power will certainly be provoked; " and power, you know, has long arms, and will " often reach over the fences of law."

" I fear them not. I have friends, who are " able, and will defend the laws in me, while I " keep within their fence; one of the principal " of whom I expect every minute to call upon " me, to communicate matter, and to conſult " upon another ſtroke."

" Then I'll take my leave. You'll have things " to talk about, which you will not deſire me to " hear. Conſpirators againſt the ſtate always " chooſe privacy."

" Conſpirators againſt the ſtate! Our conſpi- " racy, if ſuch you call it, is for the ſtate, againſt " its worſt enemies, traitors to the truſt repoſed

" in

" in them, and fools to their own true intereſt,
" as members of the community."

" All this I'll grant; and yet it is well if they
" do not find means to make themſelves paſs for
" the ſtate, and, of courſe, you for the traitors
" againſt it. They who have the power, can
" eaſily aſſume the name."

As he ſaid this, a ſervant brought his friend a note, who, upon caſting his eye over it, " The
" gentleman whom I expected (ſaid he) writes
" me word that he is not very well this morn-
" ing, and therefore deſires to ſee me at his
" houſe. If you are going my way, I'll *ſet you*
" *down*."

" I thank you, (anſwered my maſter). But
" my ambition does not riſe ſo high as that yet.
" I do not aſpire to a pillory, or a priſon, even
" in the cauſe of my country. Shall we ſee you
" at dinner?"—

" Moſt certainly. But hold; can you give
" me *change* for this note? I have not time to
" call upon my banker."

" I believe I can; but then it muſt be with
" the help of what you have yourſelf given me
" for the officer; like other bankers, who make
" a parade of taking in charitable ſubſcriptions,
" at the ſame time that they ſupport their credit
" with the money."

" That's right! I'll mention him to the perſon
" I am going to. He has abilities to ſerve him
" effectually, and, I am ſatisfied, never wants in-
" clination to do a generous action."—My maſter then gave him the change of his note, *among which I was*, and took his leave.

CHAP. III.

CHRYSAL *ſums up the character of his late maſter. Different opinions for and againſt the propriety and benefit of* SATIRE. *The former ſupported by good authority. Reaſon of ſome inconveniencies attending the indulgence of ſuch a turn. Character of* CHRYSAL*'s new maſter concluded from a former ſketch. He waits upon his patron. Character of him, with his motives for ſuch a patronage. He gives ſtriking reaſons for objecting to ſome parts of* CHRYSAL*'s maſter's pamphlet, which the other makes ſome weak attempts to vindicate.* CHRYSAL*'s maſter enjoys the pleaſure of tracing his own fame.*

THE peculiar character of my late maſter made me feel regret at leaving his ſervice, till I ſhould ſee more of him. His abilities did honour to the age and country in which he lived; and the exalted ſentiments of virtue which broke from him ſpontaneouſly, in the genuine effuſions of his ſoul, gave ſufficient reaſon to judge, that his conduct would be entirely ruled by it, and his talents exerted in the more pleaſing and extenſive way of recommending it to imitation, by diſplaying all its advantages and charms, as ſoon as time ſhould cool the fervour of his paſſions, and apply its lenient balſam to the ſores in his heart, the ſmart of which firſt gave him that poignant turn, and drove him, for relief, to exceſſes that too often drowned his better reaſon, and led him into actions which in a cooler moment he abhorred. In a word, his failings were the luxuriance of nature, as his virtues were her perfection.

As

As I have ſaid that he turned his poetical vein particularly to ſatire, I ſee your curioſity to know my opinion of the propriety and benefit of that manner of applying the powers of *wit*. But I have often told you, that I am not permitted to determine controverted points. Many, with a plauſible appearance of *good-nature*, decry it, as proceeding from a malevolence of diſpoſition, and tending only to ſpread the influence of bad example, by making it known, and harden people in vices they might forſake, if not made deſperate by detection. Many, with an apearance of *virtuous indignation*, vindicate it, as terrifying from vice, by ſhowing it in its native deformity, and correcting folly, by putting it out of countenance; which latter opinion is ſupported by the authority of one of the moſt ſenſible and beſt men of his age *.

But ſtill the indulgence of this turn is attended with many inconveniencies and dangers, if it be not guided with the greateſt care. That imaginary ſuperiority, which the power of making another ridiculous or deteſted, flatters a man with, is ſo pleaſing to the ſelf-love inſeparable from human nature, that it requires uncommon moderation to refrain from exerciſing it upon improper occaſions, and makes him preſumptuouſly conclude, that whatever happens to diſpleaſe himſelf in any particular, is a juſt object of public ridicule and cenſure. An error into which the impetuoſity of my *late* maſter ſometimes hurried him.

* *Would the anachroniſm admit the ſuppoſition, the editor ſhould imagine that the author here meant the writer of* LETTERS FROM A PERSIAN IN ENGLAND, &c., *whoſe words are theſe,* " *If all the* " *edge of wit is turned on thoſe who are juſtly the objects of ridi-* " *cule, wit is as great a benefit to* PRIVATE LIFE, *as the ſword of* " *the magiſtrate is to* PUBLIC." *Letter* 40.

I have given you a ſketch of the character of my *new* maſter upon a former occaſion *; to which I have only to add here, that a wanton abuſe of uncommon abilities inverted the end for which they were given, making them diſgraceful to himſelf, and dangerous to his country; a licentious purſuit of every thing called pleaſure having waſted his fortune, and driven him to the deſpicable neceſſity of proſtituting them to any purpoſe that might promiſe to retrieve his affairs.

The gentleman, whom he went to wait upon, the morning I came into his poſſeſſion, was one who had ſerved his king and country, with fidelity and ſucceſs, while he was permitted to follow the dictates of his own reaſon in their ſervice; but gave up the empty and diſgraceful appearance of acting in it any longer, on finding his judgment diſregarded, and himſelf deſigned to be made only a cypher, to increaſe the conſequence of another.

The indignation, however, which had prompted him to take this ſtep, led him not into thoſe unjuſtifiable lengths, which are too common, on ſuch occaſions. He was faithful to his Sovereign, though he had loſt his favour; and watched attentively over the intereſts of his country, though he was not permitted to promote them. The only inſtance in which his conduct could poſſibly be cenſured, was, his patronizing ſuch a man as my maſter. But it is a maxim in human politics, that *the end juſtifies the means*, be they what they will. He wanted to be reſtored to his former power; and thought this man's expoſing the inſufficiency of thoſe who had ſupplanted him in it, the moſt likely way to effect that purpoſe.

To this deſire of power he was not ſtimulated by the

* Vol. III.

the uſual method of repairing a ruined fortune, or making a new family. His wealth exceeded his very wiſhes, and he already enjoyed the higheſt honours he could aſpire to: all he propoſed was the glory of his Sovereign, and the advantage of his country, which that enthuſiaſtic ambition, from whence proceed the greateſt actions, made him think himſelf the moſt capable, and wiſh to be the happy inſtrument of promoting.

By this gentleman, my maſter was received with that *civility* which is commonly miſtaken for *eſteem*. After ſome general chat, on the occurrences and humour of the times, in which my maſter modeſtly took to himſelf the merit of the people's diſcontent at the miniſtry, and their meaſures, as raiſed ſolely by his pamphlet, "I allow the good "effects of it (ſaid the gentleman) and greatly "approve the principles upon which it is written; "but I much fear that your zeal has tranſported "you too far. You ſhould of all things have "avoided involving the maſter in your charge "againſt the miniſters; becauſe that alone can "give them any advantage againſt you, and is "therefore what they always feign, however un-"juſtly, when they are attacked, in order to ſcreen "themſelves behind him. Beſides, the character "of a Sovereign is ſacred, and ſhould never be "treated but with the higheſt reſpect; eſpecially "when *the virtues of the man are ſuch as would be* "*reſpectable in any character.*"

Such diſapprobation from his principal patron greatly diſappointed my maſter, who was ſo little acquainted with his ſentiments, as to think he bore reſentment againſt his Sovereign for the loſs of his favour, as well as againſt thoſe who had deprived him of it, and conſequently would be pleaſ-

ed with any thing, that might ſeem to reflect diſgrace upon him.

Recovering himſelf, however, before his embarraſſment was perceived, "I imagined," (anſwered he, with his uſual preſence of mind) "that "it was impoſſible to accuſe me of diſreſpect to "one, whom I have ſtudiouſly ſought every occa- "ſion of praiſing. As for what you take notice "of, my charge is not *perſonally againſt* him, but, "*through* him, *againſt* thoſe who had the baſeneſs "and inſolence to abuſe his *goodneſs* and *confi-* "*dence* in ſuch a manner; ſo that I think it is "impoſſible to wreſt it to the purpoſe you appre- "hend."

"I wiſh you may not be miſtaken; but much "fear that your argument will not have the "weight you expect. Praiſe, given with an air "of irony, is the keeneſt inſult; beſide, in this "particular caſe, the praiſes you beſtow upon his "*goodneſs*, are all at the expence of his *underſtand-* "*ing*. However, do not be diſpirited at what "cannot now be helped. As I think your inten- "tion was not in fault, you may depend upon "my countenance and ſupport, let what will "happen."

This comfortable aſſurance reſtored my maſter to his former ſpirits: not deſiring, however, to continue the converſation any longer upon that ſubject, "I have have this morning (ſaid he) "made no inconſiderable addition to our force. "My friend, the poet, whoſe turn for ſatire I have "heard you ſo much admire, has promiſed me to "exert all his powers in our cauſe. He will at- "tack the faults in their *private*, while I ex- "poſe their public characters; and experience has

"ſhewn,

"ſhewn, that it is eaſy to overturn the *miniſter*,
"when the *man* is made ridiculous, or odious."

"The former I'll grant you; but we have too
"many inſtances in contradiction to the latter, to
"build much upon it. However, his powers are
"great, and may do much, if he will take care
"to avoid the rock upon which you have fallen;
"and therefore I ſhall be glad to attach him ſeri-
"ouſly to us, eſpecially as he does not ſeem to be
"utterly void of virtue, notwithſtanding the liber-
"tiniſm of his conduct in ſome inſtances."

My maſter would not miſs ſo favourable an opportunity of doing juſtice to the character of his friend. Accordingly he related the ſtory of the diſtreſſes of the officer, and his family, and his generoſity to them, in ſo affecting a manner, that the gentleman directly gave him a conſiderable ſum of money, for their preſent relief, with a promiſe of providing for them himſelf, if he could not prevail with thoſe in power to do it.

Pleaſed with a ſucceſs, which he knew would be ſo pleaſing to his friend, my maſter took leave of his patron, and ſet out to trace his own fame from one coffee-houſe to another, and enjoy the applauſes, which the popularity and boldneſs of his attempt procured him from the multitude, wherever he went; after which he repaired to his uſual haunt, where he dined, and ſpent the evening in his uſual manner.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

CHRYSAL's *maſter receives an unwelcome viſit at an unſeaſonable time. His extraordinary behaviour before his ſuperiors. He is ſent to priſon.* CHRYSAL *makes ſome unpopular remarks on certain intereſting ſubjects. Conſequences of his maſter's impriſonment, with an account of his behaviour in it.*

CONFIDENT as my maſter was of his ſafety, he ſoon found that the fears of his patron were too juſt. He had ſcarce laid him down to ſleep, when his bed was ſurrounded, and himſelf made a priſoner, by a number of fellows, who, under the ſanction of authority, committed all the outrages of lawleſs ruffians, *breaking open his locks, rifling his effects*, and *ſearching into all his ſecrets.*

It was in vain for him to expoſtulate with ſuch people againſt ſo flagrant injuſtice, or claim the protection of the laws. They derided him, and all he could ſay; and having finiſhed their work, dragged him away, with inſults and abuſe, to a magiſtrate, where he had the comfort of waiting a conſiderable time in ſuch agreeable company, before his worſhip was at leiſure to ſee him.

But this, though deſigned as an indignity, was of real advantage to him, as it gave him time to recover his ſpirits, and collect his preſence of mind for an interview of ſuch importance. Accordingly, when at length he was admitted to the dread tribunal, inſtead of ſhewing any dejection at the danger which ſeemed to hang over him, he behaved in a manner, worthy of a better man, and a better cauſe. He aſſerted the violation of the laws,

laws, in his perſon, with ſo much reſolution, and appearance of reaſon, and returned the inſolence of office with ſuch contempt, anſwering illuſively to the inſidious queſtions put to him, and boldly demanding that right of being reſtored to his liberty, which was aſſured to every individual of the community, by the eſſential principles of the conſtitution, that his *judges* were ſtartled, and more than once wiſhed they had left him unmoleſted.

However, as there was no receeding now, they concluded it to be their beſt way to go through with what they had begun, and bear down oppoſition with an high hand, with which intent they ſent him directly to priſon, in defiance to all he could ſay, where he was treated with uncommon ſeverity, and the method which the law provided for his being reſtored to liberty, eluded, as long as poſſible, by fineſſes which power only could ſupport.

I ſee your indignation at ſuch an infringement of laws procured by the blood of myriads, and eſtabliſhed by the moſt ſolemn engagements, human and divine, for the ſecurity of the common rights of mankind. The part which every man feels in ſuch ſufferings, on a ſuppoſition that they may poſſibly one day fall upon himſelf, naturally intereſts you, as it did the multitude, in my maſter's cauſe. But when you come to examine, coolly, the manner of his being taken into confinement, which is what gives you ſuch offence, it will not appear ſo contrary to reaſon and juſtice, the foundation, and, as I may ſay, ſoul of all laws, as popular opinion may preſume.

All power is delegated from the people, for the mutual advantage of *governors* and *governed*. To ſupport the uſe, and prevent the abuſe of that

power, laws are eſtabliſhed, by the conſent of both, which are to be the rule of their actions. But as it is impoſſible for human wiſdom to foreſee, and provide for every occurrence that may happen, there is eſſentially implied, in the firſt truſt, a farther power of applying *unprovided* remedies to *unforeſeen* caſes, for the ſafety and advantage of the whole.

If it be objected, that theſe remedies may ſometimes be injurious to individuals, by being injudiciouſly or wrongfully applied, the anſwer is obvious. The ſufferings of a few are not to be ſet in competition with the ſafety of the many. Beſide, if the remedies were never to be applied, where there was a poſſibility of a miſtake, the evil might happen, in the time neceſſary for enquiry and deliberation. For, though *penal* laws are deſigned only to *prevent* future, *by the puniſhment of* paſt *crimes*; yet where ſuch crimes, if committed, will exceed the reach of puniſhment, and defeat the laws, the power of prevention muſt be exerted *earlier*, to *anticipate* them before commiſſion.

Without ſuch a power, the truſt of government would be imperfect, and inadequate to the end; as, if no puniſhment could be inflicted *thus for prevention*, but by preſcribed forms, human ingenuity, ever moſt fertile in evil, would deviſe expedients to evade it, till perpetration ſhould ſecure impunity, as I ſaid before, perhaps to the ruin of the ſtate.

For theſe reaſons, an extraordinary power muſt have been implicitly given, for extraordinary caſes; elſe the good of the community, which is the end of government, cannot be obtained. If this power, though, ſhould be abuſed, *the ſacred ſpirit of the laws of your happy country will ſupply the inevitable defect*

defect of the latter, and grant redreſs to the ſufferer, when a proper time comes for enquiring into the circumſtances of the caſe; a redreſs which was not provided by the people *, the moſt jealous of their liberties of any who ever united themſelves into civil ſociety, who, ſenſible of the neceſſity of ſuch a reſource, made it a fundamental rule of their government, on any occaſions of uncommon difficulty or danger, to intruſt the whole power into the hands of ſome one perſon, whom they called DICTATOR, *as his word was to be the law*, without ſubjecting him to control in the uſe, or account for the abuſe of it, when his power ſhould be at an end.

As ſoon as my maſter's impriſonment was known, the populace all took fire. They made his cauſe their own. They looked upon him as a martyr in the darling cauſe of liberty. They inſulted all government, and committed exceſſes every hour, infinitely more illegal, and dangerous to liberty, than that of which they complained.

In the mean time, his confinement was far from ſitting ſo heavy upon him as might have been expected. Though he wanted the approbation of his own mind, and the *enthuſiaſm* of the principles he profeſſed, to ſupport his reſolution, and encourage him to look forward with hope, levity of temper ſupplied the place of that reſolution, and ſaved him from ſinking under misfortunes, by making him inſenſible of their weight. He rallied his jailors, mimicked his judges, cracked jeſts upon his own undoing, and turned every circumſtance into ridicule, with ſuch drollery and unconcern, as if he was *acting* the imaginary

* *The Romans.*

imaginary ſufferings of another, not *actually* ſuffering himſelf. How long he would have been able to ſupport that ſpirit, though, came not to be tried.

CHAP. V.

CHRYSAL's maſter is viſited in priſon by his patron; and from what motives. His conduct on being ſet at liberty, and the conſequences of it. Remarkable grounds on which he was ſet at liberty, with a conjecture at the reaſon of fixing upon them. CHRYSAL *makes an enquiry into certain matters, much talked of, and little underſtood.*

AS ſoon as his friends obtained acceſs to him (for the great ſeverity of his confinement was the uncommon ſtrictneſs of it), his patron went to ſee him. As I have taken notice of his diſapprobation of what had brought my maſter into this ſcrape, you are ſurprized at his taking a ſtep that ſeemed ſo inconſiſtent with his character. But *his motives for it did honour to the man*, however ſtrange they may appear in the *politician*. He had admitted him to a degree of perſonal intimacy. He had approved of his engaging in a cauſe, to which he was himſelf attached moſt ſanguinely; and he ſcorned to deſert him in diſtreſs, occaſioned by what he thought an error of his judgment, not a *fault of his intention*.

Beſide the conſolation to himſelf, the honour of ſuch a viſit was of the greateſt advantage to my maſter's affairs; as it lightened the perſonal prejudice againſt him, and gave a good opinion of a cauſe

cauſe which appeared to have the countenance of ſuch a man.

Intoxicated with the popularity he had acquired, which, if rightly managed, might have done great matters, he was no ſooner at liberty, than he threw off all reſtraint, and ran into ſuch licentiouſneſs, as in a ſhort time leſſened its force, and loſt him every trace of the good opinion of all who gave themſelves time to think of the cauſes and conſequences of ſuch conduct. But his triumph was not long-lived.

He had been reſtored to his liberty, not as a right common to all the members of the community, on a ſuppoſition of the illegality of the manner in which he had been deprived of it, but in conſequence of certain immunities, annexed to a particular part of the legiſlature, to which he belonged.

Though the abilities and integrity of the magiſtrate who made this diſtinction, were unqueſtionable, ſome perſons, who looked farther than the preſent moment, imagined they could trace it to a cauſe not commonly attended to. He had on former occaſions been inſtrumental in depriving ſome people of liberty in the ſame manner: to have condemned that manner, therefore, now, as illegal, would have been condemning himſelf; at the ſame time, that upright obedience to the dictates of his preſent opinion, obliged him to ſet him free. Such a difficulty muſt have been diſtreſſing; but this diſtinction delivered him from it, and enabled him to ſave his credit and conſcience both, as thoſe people had borne no part in the legiſlature, and therefore had not been entitled to ſuch immunity.

I ſee your indignation ariſe at the thought, that, in a country which boaſts of being governed by *equal* laws, any one ſet of men ſhould enjoy immunities denied to the reſt: But that indignation proceeds from viewing the matter in a partial light. In the country where your lot has happily fallen, the end of government is better ſecured by a diviſion of its powers, than in any other under heaven. The great wiſdom of thoſe who made this diviſion, appears in the proviſions made to preſerve each part in it independent of the reſt, the only means by which the diviſion itſelf could be preſerved.

Now, as the *executive* power *neceſſarily* belongs ſolely to the prince, it was *equally neceſſary* to ſecure thoſe who bore a part with him in the *legiſlative*, from any undue execution of that power, which might be attempted, in order to break through that independence, and join the *legiſlative* to the *executive*; or, in other words, *veſt both powers, abſolutely, and without limitation, in the prince.* And this was the reaſon of immunities, ſo much talked of, and ſo little underſtood.

If it be ſaid, that theſe immunities operate alſo againſt fellow-ſubjects, from whom there can be no ſuch fear, and are ſometimes (perhaps too often) abuſed to diſhoneſt ends, the anſwer muſt be fought for in the depravity of the human heart, which will pervert the beſt inſtitutions to the worſt purpoſes, and makes it neceſſary to preclude every exception, that it ſhould not be extended to ſerve them. As for inſtance, if the meaneſt ſubject of the ſtate had a right to claim the aſſiſtance of the civil power in every caſe, againſt any member of the legiſlature, while in his *legiſlative* capacity, that right might be ſuborned, or feigned by the

the *executive* power, in ſuch a manner, as to overturn its independency, and prevent his diſcharging the truſt committed to him: For which reaſon, it is better that an individual ſhould ſuffer (to ſuppoſe the worſt), than an opportunity be given for ruining the whole community, according to the known maxim, that an *evil (which affects but one)* is preferable to an *inconvenience (which affects many)*. And this immunity, which is really the ſhield and ſafety of the ſtate, can never be invaded, but from a deſign againſt the liberty of the ſtate, nor abſolutely given up, without giving up that liberty along with it, though the right may be waved in particular inſtances which appear unworthy of the benefit of it. To actions, criminal in their own nature between individuals, or immediately dangerous to the ſtate, it was never deſigned to be extended, as, in ſuch caſes, it would have been deſtructive of the end for which it was inſtituted.

While my maſter was running riot in this extravagant manner, ſome things happened, which raiſed in his favour the indignation and pity of many who diſliked the man, and diſapproved his proceedings, becauſe they ſaw him perſecuted by unjuſtifiable means.

It may well be imagined, that I did not remain long enough in his poſſeſſion, to ſee the concluſion of this affair; but as I had ample opportunity of being acquainted with it at the time, and ſee that your curioſity is intereſted in the event, I will continue the account here, eſpecially as the principal occurrences in my next ſervice were connected with it in ſo particular a manner, that it is neceſſary to explain one, in order to underſtand the other.

CHAP. VI.

CHRYSAL's *maſter takes a foreign tour. Remarks upon national reflections, and attacks upon private characters.* CHRYSAL's *maſter is called to an account for certain improper liberties, by a very improper perſon, whom he treats with uncommon propriety.* CHRYSAL *makes ſome out-of-the-way reflections on a queſtion much canvaſſed to little purpoſe.*

WHEN my maſter had in ſome meaſure exhauſted the firſt flow of his ſpirits upon the recovery of his liberty, he made a ſhort excurſion abroad, as if merely for amuſement, but in reality to provide a place of retreat, in caſe of the worſt, as his apprehenſions could not but be alarmed, whenever he allowed himſelf time to think.

I have obſerved, that, in the account he gave my late maſter, when he firſt told him of his attack upon the miniſter, he ſaid he had included in it all his *countrymen.* This he really had done on that, and continued to do on all other occaſions, with a licentiouſneſs unexampled, but which loſt its force, and became contemptible, by ſinking into ſcurrility.

Attacks upon private characters, unleſs forced by neceſſity, or deſigned to ſerve good purpoſes, ſuch as perſonal reformation, or caution to others, are literally *abuſe*, and proceed always from a bad heart; but national reflections, as they can anſwer no good purpoſe of any kind, are abuſe in every ſenſe, and proceed equally from *folly* and *malevolence.* A *folly* indeed that is often puniſhed by

by *fools*, who take to themſelves that abuſe which belongs not to them in particular, and would paſs by, without lighting upon them, if not applied thus by themſelves.

My maſter had not been long abroad, when a *countryman of the miniſter's* thought proper to call him to account for the liberties he had taken with his country. The abſurdity of ſuch a ſtep, in any man, was ſtill aggravated by the peculiar circumſtances of this perſon, who had actually given weight to the ſevereſt part of the charge againſt his country (indeed the only part that would admit of weight, the reſt being, as I have ſaid, nothing but ſcurrility), by engaging in the ſervice of the enemies of its preſent government, and fighting their battles againſt it. Such an antagoniſt, therefore, was beneath the notice of any man of reaſon, and accordingly was treated ſo by my maſter, who on this occaſion behaved with a moral propriety and prudence much above the tenor of his general character. But his enemies beheld his conduct in a different light, and attributed to *cowardice* what was really the effect of *courage*.

You ſeem ſurprized at my ſaying that his declining to fight was the effect of courage. But, reflect a moment, and you will ſee, that it is *the motive of fighting*, and *not the mere fighting*, that conſtitutes true courage, and that the *faſhionable courage* of venturing life for punctilios of imaginary honour, is *real cowardice*, as it proceeds ſolely from fear of the falſe cenſure of the world; *and therefore, that to brave that cenſure in ſuch caſes is the higheſt courage*.

I would not be underſtood by this to declare abſolutely againſt a man's fighting in his own cauſe,

in all caſes indiſcriminately. Different circumſtances make an eſſential difference in things which ſuperficially appear to be alike. A man's venturing his life, as I have ſaid, in vindicating *empty punctilios* of *imaginary honour*, or in *ſupport of injuſtice*, is the higheſt and moſt ingrateful inſult to the author of that life, who has made the preſervation of it the firſt principle of action, and conſequently an indiſpenſible duty, when it can be preſerved without violation of thoſe greater duties which he has thought proper to preſcribe.

But as there are other things more valuable than life, becauſe without them life would loſe its value; reaſon, which is the voice of heaven, permits to hazard the leſſer good for the preſervation of the greater; and this is the juſtification of war between different ſtates.

To prevent the evils which ſuch a recourſe between individuals in the ſame ſtate muſt be attended with, laws are eſtabliſhed to preſerve thoſe rights, and redreſs injuries, which they may offer to each other; to theſe laws therefore, it is an indiſpenſable duty to recur for ſuch redreſs and preſervation, where they are able to effect them: but this duty does not ſeem to extend ſo far, as abſolutely and indiſcriminately to preclude the other method, of a man's ſtriving, at the hazard of his life, to effect them himſelf, when the laws cannot do it, as is too often the caſe, it being impoſſible for human wiſdom to make proviſion for every occurrence, which, in the complication and extenſiveneſs of human action, may require it.

An opinion, ſo contrary to that poſſeſſed by all who have undertaken to diſcuſs this ſubject, however conſonant to the ſenſe of mankind in general, as ſhewn in their practice, ſhould be ſupported

ported by the plaineſt, and moſt convincing reaſons.

A good name is the immediate jewel of the ſoul; it is the firſt fruit and the reward of virtue: the preſervation of it therefore is indiſputably worth hazarding life for, where the laws have not ſufficiently provided for its defence; as is the caſe, in many of the moſt delicate and tender points. If a man, for inſtance, is unjuſtly accuſed of a fact that ruins his *good name*, at the ſame time that the accuſation comes not within the reach of any law, from which he may receive redreſs; Can reaſon ſay, that he is not juſtifiable in ſtriving for that redreſs himſelf, and vindicating his good name, at the hazard of his life, when that life would be only miſery without it?

But here another difficulty occurs. Shall a man, it is ſaid, put himſelf upon a level with his injurer, and riſk a ſecond injury, in ſeeking ſatisfaction for the firſt? This certainly is an evil, but muſt be ſubmitted to, to prevent a greater.

If a man were permitted to redreſs himſelf abſolutely, without ſuch a riſk, the conſequence would be, that partiality to himſelf would make him think every thing that ſhould diſpleaſe him, an injury ſufficient to merit ſuch a redreſs, whereby murders would be multiplied, to the reproach of humanity, and ruin of the ſtate. But where this riſk makes the redreſs attended with danger, people are cautious not to run into it, but on what they at leaſt think good grounds.

Beſide, riſking life in an even ſcale, is in ſome manner ſtaking it upon the juſtice of the cauſe, and appealing to heaven for deciſion; and conſequently ſucceſs clears the character in general eſtimation: whereas killing inſidiouſly, or without

equal

equal riſk, only confirms the firſt charge, on a preſumption of conſciouſneſs, and aggravates it with the weight of new guilt. And this was the ſenſe of mankind, till the remedy was perverted to ſuch an exceſs as to become worſe than the evil, and therefore neceſſary to be aboliſhed, as far as human laws can aboliſh a general principle of action.

One particular though in the laws made to aboliſh it, deſerves remark; as it ſhews a ſtriking inſtance of the ſagacity with which human laws are often made. Killing a man, in a deliberate duel, be the cauſe ever ſo important, and utterly unprovided for in the law, is accounted *murder*, and made capitally criminal; but killing in a drunken broil, or ungoverned guſt of paſſion, is only a pardonable offence, and called by the ſofter name of *man-ſlaughter!* Now if the makers of that law had but conſidered which action proceeded from the worſt cauſe, and was liable to be attended with the worſt conſequences, from the poſſible frequency of it, they might perhaps have ſeen reaſon to reverſe the caſe, and made the *latter* capital, and the *former* at leaſt pardonable.

In a word, he who takes away the life of another, or loſes his own, in a trivial, or unjuſt cauſe, or where the laws of his country have provided him redreſs, is guilty of murder; whereas he, who kills, or is killed in a cauſe of real importance, for which there is no remedy provided him by the law, ſins not againſt the *ſpirit* of that law, however he may againſt the *letter*; and conſequently ſeems to be entitled to an immunity from the penalties of it. This reaſoning though reſpects only the reaſon of the law, and is by no means laid down as a rule for practice; it being the indiſpenſable

penſable duty of a ſubject to obey the plain letter of the law, without preſuming to oppoſe his private opinion to it, otherwiſe than by humble application to proper authority to have it altered.

CHAP. VII.

CHRYSAL's maſter's late conduct draws him into a new ſcrape, in which he comes off but ſecond beſt. He takes advantage of his misfortune, to make his eſcape from a greater. He ſuffers the reſentment of his enemies, as far as they can reach him, and meets from his friends the fate of all uſeleſs tools, after having ſerved them with improbable ſucceſs. A ſtriking inſtance of the advantage of an upright judge, and equal laws. CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

THE opinion that my maſter's having behaved in this manner proceeded from a want of ſpirit, ſoon laid him under a neceſſity of ſhewing the contrary. A perſon, who was involved deeper than he choſe to appear in his accuſations againſt the miniſter, though he was known to be his creature, thought he might ſafely invalidate the credit of the charge, and curry farther favour with his patron, by denying it, in terms of ſuch abuſe, as ſhould make the accuſer infamous, on ſubmitting to them, as he imagined he would.

But in this he found himſelf miſtaken. The *captiouſneſs of falſe honour*, that often paſſes for true reſolution, *which is only the reſult of virtue*, was now piqued; and two beings, (for it was impoſſible for the other to draw back) who called themſelves

ſelves rational, hazarded their lives, in ſupport of what neither could have ſupported by reaſon.

The event proved immediately unfavourable to my maſter, who received a wound that for ſome time ſeemed to threaten his life. But he ſoon thought the danger amply made amends for, by the pretence it gave him to put off from time to time the reſentment of that part of the legiſlature to which he belonged, for the offence which had occaſioned his being confined, and at length to fly from it, when he found it could not be any longer prevented, by ſuch fineſſes, from burſting on his head. Such a flight was an implicit acknowledgment of his guilt. He was therefore deprived of his part in the legiſlature, and conſequently of all the immunities annexed to it, and given up to the common courſe of the laws, for that and other matters, whenever he ſhould be found within reach of their power. Nor was this all. To ſhew ſtill ſtronger diſapprobation of his conduct, the breach of thoſe immunities, upon which the magiſtrate had founded his diſcharge from confinement, was overlooked, and ſuch offences as his excluded from their protection for the future.

You cannot be ſurpriſed at his meeting ſuch a fate. The tools of a ſtateſman, however ſucceſsful they may have been, are always thrown aſide with neglect, the moment they have done their work; but when they fail, however blameleſsly, or run into any error, though only from exceſs of zeal, the weight of the neglect is made ſtill heavier, by heaping all the blame upon them. But what will you think, when I tell you, that, unequal as he muſt appear to have been to ſuch an attempt, in conſequence, character, and abilities, he raiſed ſo threatening a ſtorm, that the miniſter thought

thought proper to retire out of its way, as all his friends apprehended they ſhould have been obliged to follow him? a ſucceſs for which he was in a great meaſure indebted to the aſſiſtance of my late maſter, who repreſented their private characters in ſuch colours in his ſatirical writings, as will make their memories pay a dear price for their power, the poetical merit of his works, in which their names are branded with indelible infamy, enſuring their immortality. Such is the baſis upon which ſtateſmen found their greatneſs, and ſo eaſily is a jealous populace led away by any thing that flatters their preſent humour.

I ſay not this, as deciding upon the merits of the diſputes in which he was concerned. I think too meanly of human politics in general, to give my opinion in favour of any one ſcheme of them, in preference to another. They are all alike, a jumble of villany and blunders. All I intend is, to ſhew on what a ſandy foundation men, who value themſelves upon their wiſdom, wearing out their lives in anxious toils and dangers, do build their hopes; and what unworthy means are often made uſe of to overturn them, and work ends, reputed great, on purpoſe, perhaps, to humble man in his own eyes.

As for my maſter, he was no ſooner removed out of the ſight of the mob, whoſe idol he had been in ſuch an extravagant degree, than he was entirely out of their mind, and the ſtorm he had raiſed, ſubſided ſo totally, as to leave no other trace behind it but his ruin.

I have obſerved your anxiety to know whether he ever obtained redreſs for the injuſtice done him in his property, and the injurious treatment he received when he was firſt apprehended, as I ſaid

that

that the fellows employed to take him had, under the ſanction of authority, committed all the outrages of lawleſs ruffians. The intereſt you take in the cauſe of ſuch a man, can ariſe from nothing but your love of juſtice, *which ſhould not be violated in the perſon of the moſt unjuſt.* It will therefore give you pleaſure to be informed, that the laws of your country never ſhone with brighter luſtre than in this inſtance.

In deſpite of every artifice and effort which power and chicane could make uſe of to evade or intimidate from the execution of them, (a ſtriking inſtance of the latter of which, was, depriving his patron of every degree of power and honour of which he could be deprived, without regard to his great ſervices and perſonal conſequence, only for appearing in his cauſe) an able and upright magiſtrate ſupported them with ſuch reſolution and judgment, that he obtained exemplary redreſs for all he had ſuffered, that could be redreſſed, as did ſeveral others who had been involved in the ſame circumſtances, as having been employed by him.

In gratification to your curioſity, I have thus given you the general heads of his ſtory. To have dwelt on the minuter circumſtances, however curious in themſelves, would have led me too great a length, beſide that they come not within my deſign, as I was not directly in his poſſeſſion when they happened. To return, therefore, now to the regular chain of my own adventures, I muſt go back to the time of my leaving his ſervice, which was not very long after he had been releaſed from his confinement.

Among the crowds that came to congratulate him upon this event, was a clergyman, whoſe profeſſions

profeſſions of perſonal attachment, and reſpect for his principles and abilities, were ſtrained to ſuch a fulſome height as would have diſguſted vanity itſelf.

My maſter ſaw through him directly, and played him off with humour peculiar to himſelf, till he concluded with telling him that he had a work then on hand, upon the ſame ſcheme with his, which he intended to publiſh by ſubſcription.

My maſter, who knew the man, took the hint in the proper light of a modeſt way of begging, and *clapped* a couple of guineas into his hand, deſiring to be inſerted in his liſt; *upon which occaſion I left his ſervice.*

CHAP. VIII.

Reaſon of the joy with which CHRYSAL *was received by his new maſter. Account of a curious, though not uncommon way of getting a living. Converſation between* CHRYSAL'*s maſter and his gueſt. They compare notes on their different attempts in the literary trade.* CHRYSAL'*s maſter is encouraged by his friend, from his own example. A remarkable account of a certain matter that made much noiſe.*

THE joy my *new* maſter felt on the receipt of ſo ſmall a ſum, ſhewed the conſequence it was of to him. He thanked his benefactor in terms of rapture, and vowing eternal gratitude and attachment to him and his cauſe, departed with an happy heart. Nor was his joy without cauſe. He had invited an acquaintance to ſup and ſpend

the evening with him, and had neither money nor credit to provide any thing for his entertainment.

Deſpicable as the vanity of making invitations in ſuch circumſtances may appear to you, it was one of his chief reſources to ſupport himſelf and his family, as he never invited any but ſuch as he expected to borrow much more from than it coſt him to entertain them.

Your indignation at the mention of ſo mean a ſhift, ſhews your happy ignorance of the ways of this populous place, in which there are numbers who keep up a decency of external appearance, and ſupport life only by this method of raiſing contributions on their acquaintances, ſpending with one what they have got from another, in order to get from him too, and ſo on; with this difference only from common beggars, that they ſeldom apply to the ſame perſon twice, and, inſtead of praying for their benefactors with an appearance of gratitude, wherever they meet them avoid their company, and are always ſeeking for new acquaintances, as quarry for them to prey upon.

On this errand he had ſallied out this morning, but met with ſuch bad ſucceſs that he had been obliged to have recourſe to the *ſubſcription ſcheme*, an addition which he had lately made to his former plan. His joy, therefore, at my late maſter's generoſity, was but natural. He returned home in high ſpirits, and giving his wife half his prize to provide *two or three nice little things*, ſecured *me* for future contingencies.

Every thing being thus adjuſted, his gueſt, who came punctually at the appointed time, was received with all the *formalities*, and *airs* of *politeneſs*, of *high life*. The converſation before, and at ſupper, ran on the uſual topics of the *weather*, *politics*,

litics, and the *ſecret hiſtory of the day*; but when my maſter's lady had withdrawn, and he ſaw his friend began to palate his wine with pleaſure, (for he never made his puſh till the heart was warm) he took occaſion, from ſome *modeſt* mention the other made of his munificence in the relief of merit in diſtreſs, to lament his own inability to indulge that darling pleaſure of his ſoul, as a proper introduction to his buſineſs.

"I have wondered with much concern (an-
"ſwered his friend) at your languiſhing ſo long
"in this obſcurity. It is all your own fault.
"Why do you not exert yourſelf? There is no-
"thing which ſpirit and diligence cannot con-
"quer."———

"Very true, my deareſt friend!" (replied my maſter, with a ſhrug of his ſhoulders, and an heavy ſigh); "but what can diligence, or abili-
"ties either, do, when they cannot find employ-
"ment? I have *offered* myſelf to *miniſtry* and
"*oppoſition*, to *bookſellers* and *news-writers*; and
"all to no purpoſe: though indeed, if it was not
"for the aſſiſtance of one of the latter, who now
"and then takes an *eſſay*, or a *letter* from me,
"I ſhould be utterly at a loſs. So that what can
"I do?———

"What! why any thing, rather than be idle.
"If one thing won't do, another may. There is
"not an article *in the trade*, which I have not
"tried in my time; I *made bibles*, *magazines*, and
"*reviews*; *ſermons*, *ballads*, and *dying ſpeeches*:
"and though all failed, I never loſt my ſpirit.
"The miſcarriage of one ſcheme only ſet my in-
"vention at work to ſtrike out another. No man
"can have greater difficulties to ſtruggle with

" than I had; and yet you ſee I have got over
" them all,"———

" Yes! but, my deareſt friend, you had advan-
" tages: the countenance and aſſiſtance of ſuch a
" patron as your's"———

" Were juſt as great advantages to me, as your
" patron's are to you; and no more. I had the
" honourable advantage of *leading a bear*, for a bit
" of bread; and betraying his ſecrets to his father
" and mother, for the hope of a church-living;
" which I ſhould not have got at laſt; but that
" it was not worth ſelling."———

" You aſtoniſh me! Don't you owe all your
" preferments, all your affluence, to the intereſt
" of your patron?"———

" What I owe my preferments to, is not ne-
" ceſſary to mention; but my affluence I owe to
" a very different cauſe. *The detection of that im-
" poſtor*, was the thing that made my fortune: I
" might have remained in my original poverty to
" this day, if it had not been for that."———

" For that! Is it poſſible! I cannot conceive
" that the profits upon the ſale of a pamphlet or
" two, (and that not a very extenſive ſale nei-
" ther), could do ſuch great things. My *novel*,
" I thought, bade as fair for a *good run* as any
" thing: it was *ſeaſoned high* to the taſte of the
" times, and yet it did very little more than
" pay."———

" The ſale! Hah! hah! hah! No, no! I did
" not depend upon that. My profit came in an-
" other way entirely."———

" What can be your meaning? If it be not
" too great a ſecret, I ſhould be much obliged to
" you to explain this matter. It may poſſibly be
" of ſervice to me."

" Why,

"Why, on that account, and as I think I can "depend upon your honour, I don't much care if "I do. If you are ſo much ſurpriſed at my ſay- "ing that I made my fortune by that pamphlet, "what will you think when I tell you farther, "that I never wrote one line of it, nor was I any "more concerned in the ſale than you, who knew "nothing of the matter? But, not to perplex you "with gueſſing at what it is impoſſible you ſhould "ever diſcover; you can be no ſtranger to the "noiſe that *impoſtor* made, when he firſt came "here. While he did no more than tell his own "ſtory, it was thought by his old fraternity to be "the beſt way not to give it conſequence by con- "tradicting it, but let it die away of itſelf; be- "ſides, that poſſibly it might not have been ſo "eaſy to contradict it to any effect, while the "perſons concerned were all living, and the facts "freſh in every one's memory. But when he "went ſo far as to attack the whole body, and "was evidently undermining the foundation up- "on which they ſtood, by tearing off the veil of "antiquity behind which they hid themſelves, "and expoſing all their myſtery to light, the mat- "ter became more ſerious; and it was judged "neceſſary to ruin his character, in order to in- "validate the credit of his work, the merit of "which made a direct attack not only difficult, "but alſo too doubtful of ſucceſs, to hazard an "affair of ſuch importance upon it.

"For this reaſon, heaven and hell were conjur- "ed up, and every engine ſet at work, to prove "his ſtory of himſelf falſe in every particular, and "make him appear the moſt complicated villain "that ever exiſted. But the credit of thoſe who "made this attack upon him, was too low, for it

" to have any effect; as their principles, and the
" intereſted motives upon which they proceeded,
" were ſufficiently known; ſo that it only did
" him ſervice, by ſhowing his conſequence.

" While they were conſidering how to repair
" this defeat, neceſſity ſuggeſted to me the lucky
" thought of offering them my aſſiſtance. I had
" already got ſome degree of credit, by anticipat-
" ting them in the detection of two ſilly impoſ-
" tures, the abſurdity of which would ſoon have
" diſcovered them without my help. This gave
" weight to my offer: accordingly they readily
" embraced it; and, deſiring only the *ſanction of*
" *my name*, (for which you may judge I was *well*
" *paid*), took all the trouble upon themſelves.

" The reaſons which defeated them, aſſiſted
" me. Every thing *I was thought to ſay*, carried
" weight, as *appearing to proceed* from the higheſt
" candour and attachment to truth, as nothing
" elſe could *naturally* be ſuppoſed to have made
" me take ſuch pains to detect an impoſtor, ſo
" favourable to the principles I profeſſed myſelf.
" The public alſo had got enough of his ſtory,
" and was ready to liſten to one againſt him. The
" conſequence you know. His character was
" ruined with the public; and, of courſe, a pre-
" judice raiſed againſt his work, which ruined
" that alſo, without the trouble of a regular con-
" futation, which, as I obſerved before, might
" not have been an eaſy matter: and now I hope
" the myſtery is explained to you."—

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

CHRYSAL's maſter makes ſome ſtriking remarks on his friend's account of this myſterious tranſaction, and draws inferences from it, not commonly attended to. He entertains his friend with a curious ſong, who makes an important hit, juſt in his own character, upon it. CHRYSAL's *maſter boggles a little at firſt, at his friend's propoſal, but is encouraged, by his example, to undertake it.*

"I AM much obliged to you for ſuch a proof of "your confidence, (returned my maſter), par-"ticularly as it clears up ſome points to me, "which I own gave me equal concern and ſur-"priſe; and of which, delicacy prevented my de-"ſiring an explanation from you. Theſe were "the manner in which that attack was made up-"on him, and the arguments and proofs brought "in ſupport of it, which were ſo *unfair, inconclu-"ſive*, and in many inſtances *contradictory*, that "I was aſtoniſhed any man of ſenſe and honeſty "could make uſe of, or be influenced by them."

"Why, that is very true. Their zeal often "overſhot the mark to be ſure. But that ſigni-"fied nothing. Set the public once upon the "ſcent of ſcandal, and they'll hunt it like blood-"hounds, through thick and thin. Nothing can "be ſo groſs as to ſtop them. You may as well "whiſtle to the wind to change its courſe, as "ſpeak reaſon to the people, when they have con-"ceived a prejudice."——

"But what is your opinion of that affair? Is "he, or is he not, the impoſtor they would make "him? For I confeſs, the arguments by which

"they

" they would prove him one, are ſo far from an-
" ſwering their deſign with me, that *I think they*
" *prove the contrary, by proving nothing;* as it is
" natural to conclude, that if there were any bet-
" ter, ſuch would not have been made uſe of.
" But you certainly muſt have had ſufficient op-
" portunities of being informed, in the inter-
" courſe you neceſſarily had with them."———

" As to that, I know no more of the matter
" than you do, nor ever gave myſelf the trouble
" to enquire. All the intercourſe I had with
" them, was only to ſave appearances, and get
" my money. Whether he was an impoſtor, or
" not, was the ſame thing to me; I was paid for
" ſeeming to prove him one, and that was all I
" cared for."

" But you continue to call him one ſtill. Do
" they alſo pay you for that now?"———

" No. I do that for my own credit. Were I
" to retract, all the ſcandal that has been heaped
" upon him, *in my name*, would revert upon my-
" ſelf; ſo that, whenever I mention him, I am
" obliged to do it in the old phraſe. I know
" ſome *ſqueamiſh* people would have ſcrupled the
" whole, but that is not my way of thinking.
" I hold nothing to be ſo great a reproach as po-
" verty, nor any thing a ſin that can get over it.
" And ſo here's my ſervice to you. I wiſh you
" could hit upon ſuch another opportunity."

" And if I would ſcruple to make uſe of it,
" may I periſh in my preſent poverty; and I de-
" fy the devil to find an heavier curſe."

The converſation then turned to more general topics, in the courſe of which, my late maſter naturally coming to be mentioned, " That's right (ſaid
" my maſter), I have ſomething to ſhow you that

" will

" will give you pleaſure. You may remember I " told you, that I am ſometimes obliged to a " printer of my acquaintance for *helping me to a* " *job, in the letter or eſſay way.* Happening to " call upon him this morning, to try if he could " take any thing from me, he ſhewed me this " (pulling a piece of greaſy paper out of his poc- " ket), which I think really a curioſity. It is a " *proof* of a bawdy ſong, which the gentleman " we have been talking of wrote, and had a few " copies of it printed for the amuſement of his " particular intimates. My friend got it from " one of his journeymen, who ſometimes works " for that gentleman, and ſays there are a good " many more of them, which are all printed to- " gether in a ballad. You'll find it worth your " reading. Nothing ever was ſo highly worked " up. It gave me ineffable pleaſure."

" If you can prove this to be wrote by that " perſon (ſaid the other, ſpitting and riggling in " his chair, after having pored over it for ſome " time), your fortune is made. You know his " enemies are ſtriving to run him down by any " means. Now, this will give them ſo plauſible " an handle againſt him, that they will not fail " to reward you liberally for the diſcovery. All " you have to do, is to prove it plainly upon " him."—

" I am pretty ſure that may be done, (anſwer- " ed my maſter, with ſome heſitation); but I— " I—I—I hardly know how——I am under per- " ſonal obligation"—

" Nay, if you let ſuch things as that interfere, " I give you up. What ſignifies *paſt obligation*, " when put in competition with *preſent intereſt?* " You know what my old antagoniſt ſays, that it

" is

" is a rule among his former fraternity, never to
" let any ſocial or moral duties interfere with re-
" ligion, of which he gives a remarkable inſtance
" in his own ſtory. Now, *my intereſt is my reli-*
" *gion*; and, every thing which interferes with
" that, I abjure, as I have ſufficiently proved.
" But I beg pardon; I would by no means preſs
" you to do any thing againſt your conſcience, if
" it is ſo tender."—

" Wrong me not, my deareſt friend, by ſuch
" an opinion; my conſcience is as far from being
" tender as your's can be. I was only ſurprized
" that I had not myſelf ſeen what you mention-
" ed. But now that your friendſhip has pointed
" it out to me, you ſhall ſee me purſue it as ea-
" gerly as you can deſire. All I want is your
" direction. Leave the reſt to me."

The remainder of the evening was ſpent in conſultation upon the plan proper to be purſued, the forming of which my maſter ſubmitted implicitly to the ſuperior judgment and experience of his friend, who was ſo pleaſed with this mark of his reſpect, and ſo ſure of ſucceſs, that, on going away, he took a modeſt hint, and lent him five guineas, reminding him at the ſame time of the confidence he had placed in his honour, by diſcloſing his affairs to him, and enjoining him to ſecrecy.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

CHRYSAL's maſter purſues his ſcheme, and violates moral honeſty to ſerve the cauſe of virtue and religion. He waits upon his patron, who honeſtly refuſes a character to which he knows he has no right; but undertakes the affair from a more prevailing motive, in which he is remarkably aſſiſted by another perſon of leſs modeſty, who pleads the cauſe of religion and virtue in vain, till honour at length turns the ſcale in their favour. CHRYSAL's *maſter is diſappointed of his hopes, and makes uſe of an expedient in character, to eſcape from the juſt reward of all his labours.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

NOT to loſe a moment's time, in a matter of ſuch importance, my maſter went next morning to his worthy friend the printer, to whom he opened his ſcheme, and, by his influence, with the aſſiſtance of a bribe, and promiſes of much more, he prevailed on the fellow from whom the former paper was got, to betray the truſt of his employer, and ſteal the whole ballad.

The next thing was to make his honeſt acquiſition known to thoſe from whom he expected the reward of his pious pains. For this purpoſe he waited upon his patron, and having with difficulty gained acceſs to him, on repeated meſſages of important buſineſs, after the common cant of compliments, "I am come, Sir, (ſaid he) on an "errand that I know muſt be agreeable to you, as "it will afford a ſignal opportunity of ſhewing "your regard for religion and virtue."

"Heh!"

" Heh!" (anſwered his patron) " My regard " for religion and virtue! What the devil does " the fellow mean? What regard have I ever " ſhewn for either, in word or action, that ſhould " put ſuch a thought in your head? If you are " come to preach to me, you ſhall ſoon find the " effects of your piety."——

" Pardon me, Sir; I know you better, than to " be guilty of ſuch preſumption. What I mean " is this. Fortune has favoured me with an op- " portunity of putting it into your power to eſta- " bliſh ſuch a character; and as I know moſt " people are fond of the name, when it can be " obtained without the trouble of the practice, I " thought it my duty to acquaint you with it, e- " ſpecially as it will enable you, at the ſame time, " to do a particular pleaſure to your friends in " power."

" Why, there may be ſomething in that, as " you ſay; but for the reſt, I care as little for the " name as I do for the practice, and would not " give myſelf a moment's trouble to get it; ſo be " quick, and let me hear what you have got to " ſay. I have a *match to ride* to-morrow againſt " a gentleman for a conſiderable wager, and muſt " ſee his groom this morning, in order *to ſettle* " *matters with him;* beſide which, I have an aſ- " ſignation with his wife, who expects me at this " very time; ſo that I have not a moment to loſe " about religion and virtue."

My maſter, who knew him too well to attempt interfering with ſuch engagements, politely wiſh- ed him ſucceſs, and then gave him in few words an account of the whole affair, only reſerving to himſelf the honour of the thought, with which his patron was ſo pleaſed, that he promiſed to give

give him all the aſſiſtance in his power, *if it was only for the fun of the thing.*

Accordingly, as ſoon as he could ſpare time from his own weightier concerns, he mentioned the matter to thoſe more immediately concerned in it, who embraced the project eagerly, and rewarded my maſter with moſt *liberal promiſes* for his pains, of which they reſolved to take advantage, in order to cruſh a perſon, either hated or feared by every one among them.

In the attack made upon him for this purpoſe, the principal part was undertaken by one whoſe regard for religion and virtue was heightened by a motive not the moſt conſiſtent with either. This was the perſon who had been competitor with the culprit for *the higher order of the* MOCK MONASTERY. In the account I gave you of that curious tranſaction, I obſerved that he cheriſhed a ſecret grudge againſt the other, which was aggravated ſo violently by the diſgrace he ſuffered on that occaſion, that he had prevailed to have him expelled the ſociety *. Such an opportunity, therefore, as this, of completing his revenge, was not to be miſſed by one of his principles. Accordingly, though at the ſight of the ballad he knew it to be more than a collection of the ſongs *which he had himſelf often bore a part in ſinging at the monaſtery, and ſome of the worſt of which he had boaſted of being the author of,* he inveighed againſt it with all the fervency and enthuſiaſtic zeal of a modern fanatic, and diſplayed the danger of letting ſuch an inſult upon every thing held ſacred go unpuniſhed, in ſuch ſtrong and affecting colours, as afforded high entertainment to all who heard him, and were acquainted with his life.

* See vol. 3.

But all his eloquence would have proved ineffectual to make ſuch of his fraternity as were not, like him, ſtimulated by private motives, give the lie to their own practice in ſo flagrant a manner as to cenſure the theory of it, had not ſome particular expreſſions happened to affect the honour of one of them, whom all the reſt of courſe eſpouſed; and *thus, for once, honour turned the ſcale in favour of virtue and religion, too light by themſelves*, and the ballad was condemned, as tending to debauch the principles of the people, though it was ſufficiently known that it was not deſigned for publication, nor would ever have been heard of, had not this attack raiſed a curioſity about it.

Through the whole of this important tranſaction, my maſter performed his part moſt cleverly, ſtopping at nothing that was thought any way neceſſary to bring it to effect. As ſoon therefore as it was concluded, he prepared to receive the reward of his labour, the enjoyment of which he had anticipated in imagination in every ſhape it could be given.

But it was not long before he found his hopes had been too ſanguine. Inſtead of being rewarded immediately, as he had been made to expect, the job was ſcarce done, when he could perceive the ſmiles of favour grow cooler upon him, as often as he went to pay his court to his patrons, in order to keep them in mind of their promiſes. A ſtate of ſuch uncertainty, ſevere enough upon any, was not to be borne by one in his circumſtances. The expectations he had raiſed in the height of his hopes, had opened the mouths of all his creditors upon him with an importunity not to be quieted; beſide, that he had embezzled ſome public money entruſted to him, a demand for

for which he expected every day, and knew he could not ſhift off for a moment.

Driven almoſt to diſtraction by ſuch irreſiſtible neceſſity, he had no reſource but to throw himſelf at the feet of the perſon who had appeared moſt ſanguine in the purſuit of his ſcheme, and conſequently been moſt liberal of his promiſes to him, and implore his aſſiſtance to extricate him from his accumulated diſtreſſes. But they who will moſt readily avail themſelves of villany, always deteſt the villain. All the return he received was a cold profeſſion of concern, and a ſhameleſs excuſe of wanting that power to relieve him, which the caitiff ſuppliant well knew he had.

A new misfortune often lightens the weight of thoſe under which the mind was ſinking before, by rouſing it from liſtleſs dejection to an exertion of its powers. Such a diſappointment of his only hope ſhewed him all the horrors of his ſituation, and made him inſtantly *caſt about* how to eſcape from what he found he could not redreſs. Inſtead, therefore, of betraying it by his looks, which he knew were watched, he aſſumed an air of uncommon ſpirits; and telling every one that he had got a poſitive aſſurance of receiving the promiſed reward without any farther delay, he went to one of his tradeſmen, by the time he thought the news might have reached him, and, taking up goods to a conſiderable amount, for which he confidently engaged to pay at a fixed and ſhort day, no ſooner got them into his poſſeſſion, than he ſold them privately at half price, and packing up whatever he could carry with him, fled beyond the reach of his creditors, and ſo proved how far his late conduct had proceeded, as

he profeſſed, from his high regard to moral virtue and religion.

The agitation and horrors of his mind, from the time he had reſolved upon flight till he had effected it, may be eaſily conceived. Whether the preſent ſafety it procured him gave him any laſting relief, I had not an opportunity of ſeeing, as *I quitted his ſervice* at the inn where he took a poſt-chaiſe to get off; though it is moſt probable that, after the firſt hurry of his ſpirits ſubſided, a ſenſe of the various villanies, by which he had brought himſelf to ſuch a ſtate of exile, embittered the very bleſſing of liberty, and kept his mind in ſlavery, though his body was free.

CHAP. XI.

CHRYSAL *again changes his ſervice. His new maſter is obliged to pay expedition fees, to get over artificial delays. He and his miſtreſs ſet out on a long journey, to do what might have been better done at home.* CHRYSAL *makes ſome intereſting reflections on a moſt important ſubject. Story of* CHRYSAL'*s maſter.* CHRYSAL *continues his reflections on the ſame ſubject, which he conſiders in a farther and moſt affecting point of view.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

MY late maſter had ſcarce decamped, when a young gentleman came to the inn, and ordering a *chaiſe and four* to be got ready with the utmoſt expedition, gave my new maſter a bank-note to pay for it, *in the change of which he received me.*

The

The anxiety which my *new* maſter expreſſed to have the grooms make haſte, was a ſufficient reaſon for them to practiſe every delay they could deviſe, in order to extort expedition fees, at which they were ſo expert, that he was forced to give them almoſt as much as he paid for the chaiſe, before he could get it to ſtir.

When at length every thing was ſettled, he directed them to a particular place, where an hackney-coach waited for him, out of which he received a young lady, with a couple of ſmall bundles, and then bade the poſtillions drive on; but they had no ſooner got out of the town, than he changed his orders, and directed them to take another road. This occaſioned a new delay. The fellows alleged their being obliged to go where their maſter had ordered them, and no-where elſe, and made ſo many difficulties, that, as they expected, my maſter was compelled to purchaſe their compliance at their own price.

All obſtacles being thus got over, he turned to the young lady, who ſat trembling and panting by his ſide, and embracing her tenderly, "Now, "my deareſt love (ſaid he), all our fears are "over. Should we be even traced to the inn, "this turn will effectually baffle all purſuit."

"I wiſh it may, (anſwered ſhe); but I ſhall "never think myſelf ſafe, till I am abſolutely out "of their reach, and all is over."

The converſation of lovers is agreeable only to themſelves. The reſt of their's for two days, as they flew rather than travelled (for which expedition they paid ſufficiently, every ſet of poſtillions giving the word to the next), will not bear repetition. As ſoon as they got to the end of their journey, they put an end to their moſt immediate

fears alſo, by a marriage, which might have been performed with a much greater probability of ſucceſs at home, had not a poſitive law prevented it.

I ſee your ſurprize at my ſaying that a *poſitive law* prevented marriage, as the proſperity of the community depends in the firſt degree on the promotion of that ſtate. But ſo it happens in human affairs, that the true intereſt of the people is not always the firſt object of the laws made for their government.

Though too general experience confirms this remark, it is neceſſary to explain the particular circumſtance that gives occaſion to it in this inſtance.

The firſt end of marriage is the propagation of the ſpecies, in the manner moſt agreeable to reaſon, and likely to produce the happineſs of the parties, as well as the population of the ſtate. As the paſſions which lead to this end, are ſtrongeſt before reaſon has acquired ſtrength to direct them, it is neceſſary that they ſhould be ſubject to the direction of others who may be better qualified to diſcern and promote their intereſt. This right of direction naturally belongs to thoſe who are moſt intimately concerned in that intereſt, as affecting a part of themſelves; and hence, among every people upon the earth, however differing in other reſpects and cuſtoms, this right of directing the matrimonial choice has always belonged to the parents, till maturity of age may be preſumed to ripen judgment, and ſo remove the neceſſity upon which it is founded.

But however evident this right is, the paſſions of youth ſo often rebel againſt it, that it was found neceſſary to enforce it by expreſs laws. Theſe laws, though, the profeſſed end of which is

to

to make marriage happy, ſhould never be perverted to the unnatural purpoſe of preventing it entirely, by clogging it with ſuch unneceſſary and unreaſonable reſtrictions, as tend to ſubjugate not only natural liberty, but alſo the higheſt intereſt of the ſtate, which depends upon population, to avarice, caprice, or pride of family in parents, or to views of intereſt in thoſe appointed to ſupply their place.

The particular caſe of my maſter, which gave occaſion to theſe reflections, was this. He was the younger ſon of a noble family, to the honours of which his riſing virtues promiſed to add new luſtre. Youthful inclination had firſt attached him to this lady, whoſe merits, upon acquaintance, confirmed that attachment, more than her very large fortune. Such a marriage could not fail to meet the approbation of reaſon, and paternal prudence. Accordingly, every neceſſary preliminary was agreed upon, when the ſudden death of her father threw in large obſtacles, which threatened to prevent it, at leaſt for a longer time than youthful impatience could bear. For, as he had not actually ſigned his conſent, thoſe to whom the care of his daughter devolved thought proper to exert the right which the law gave them, of objecting to the diſparity between her fortune and that of her lover, and ſo break off a match evidently for their mutual advantage.

When the lovers found that all they could do to influence their compliance was ineffectual, they had recourſe to this expedient (which the ſage makers of the law had, perhaps inadvertently, left open) to evade it, by flying beyond its power, and there ſolemnized a marriage which ſhould be valid at their return home, though entered into without

without any of the prudential cautions for ſecuring happineſs which are cuſtomary on ſuch occaſions, and he had in vain offered to come into; ſo that the law, which was profeſſedly deſigned to prevent inconſiderate and unhappy marriages, in its effect deprived this, and the many marriages of the kind, of the means for procuring happineſs, which former laws, founded on reaſon, had provided for them.

It is not to be denied, but the evils which were immediately alleged as the occaſion of this law, called aloud for remedy; but whether the remedy provided by it did not introduce an inconvenience of worſe conſequence to the public than thoſe evils, is not ſo clear a caſe. Whatever reſtrictions might have been thought neceſſary, in worldly wiſdom, to prevent ſecret marriages, by which either the honours of families might be ſuppoſed to ſuffer diminution, or their fortunes fall a prey to mercenary deſign, where theſe conſiderations interfere not, ſuch reſtrictions ſhould never, in good policy, extend.

On the contrary, every impediment and delay *not immediately proceeding from moral neceſſity*, ſhould be removed, and the ſtate of matrimony encouraged by ſuch honours and advantages as ſhould counterbalance the inconveniencies of it to perſons labouring under circumſtances of indigence; by which means, the inferior ranks of the people, whoſe numbers make the ſtrength of a ſtate, would be delivered from the difficulties and fears which at preſent deter them from entering into matrimony, to the heavy loſs of the community, and the immediate ruin of ſuch numbers of both ſexes, whoſe natural paſſions, debarred from this their only proper reſource, lead them into ſuch vices

vices as defeat the end of their creation, and make them a reproach to humanity. How many infants would daily be ſaved from the moſt unnatural murder, to the ornament and advantage of their country, could the wretched parents have ſaved their own ſhame by marriage? How many females, who offer themſelves in the highways to brutal proſtitution, periſhing with cold, hunger, and diſeaſe, might have been the happy mothers of many children, and performed all the duties of their ſtation in virtuous eſteem, had not their being hindered from marrying, *by impediments made by law*, betrayed them to deſtruction?

As ſoon as my maſter had thus accompliſhed the end of his journey, he ſet out on his return to enjoy the fruits of it at home. But I continued not in his poſſeſſion to ſee much of that mutual happineſs which his marriage promiſed, *being borrowed* from him on the road by a gentleman of his acquaintance, who had been bubbled out of all his money at an horſe-race, and was now *fighting his way* to town, by running in debt at every inn, and raiſing contributions thus on all he met, of whom he had the leaſt knowledge.

CHAP. XII.

CHRYSAL's *new maſter ſtrikes out an adventure. He is ſmitten with a girl in a travelling-waggon, and changes his appearance to get admiſſion to her. Account of the company in the waggon. A good-natured miſtake of one of the paſſengers, gives occaſion for a broil, which is put an end to by an accident, that does not mend the matter.*

DISTRESSING as ſuch a ſituation would have been

been to another, cuſtom had made it ſo familiar to my *new* maſter, that he thought nothing of it, but travelled on with his equipage, as unconcerned, and ready to engage in any mad freak, as if his pockets were full of money. Nor was he long without an opportunity of indulging his diſpoſition.

As he was rolling careleſsly along, his chariot was ſtopped in a narrow part of the road, by one of thoſe travelling-waggons, whoſe unwieldy weight gives them the privilege of taking place of their betters. Such a circumſtance naturally made the travellers *in both carriages* look out, when he was ſtruck with the uncommon beauty of a young creature in the waggon, whoſe charms, in the firſt opening of their bloom, gave ſcope to imagination to paint a proſpect, if poſſible, beyond their preſent perfection.

Such temptation could ſcarce be reſiſted by one who had reaſoned his paſſions into the beſt ſubjection, much leſs by him, who blindly obeyed them in, or rather ſtimulated them to their utmoſt exceſs. He no ſooner ſaw, therefore, than he reſolved to *have* her by any means. The firſt thing to be done, for this pious purpoſe, was to change his appearance, in order to get into her company, as the leaſt ſuſpicion of his rank would directly *blow* his deſign. But this was no difficulty. He was well accuſtomed to lay it down; and the meaneſt character in life ſat as naturally upon him as his own.

Accordingly, as ſoon as his chariot paſſed the waggon, he drove on furiouſly, till he was out of ſight, when he alighted, and changing clothes with one of his ſervants out of livery, ordered them to leave

leave the great road, and wait for him at an inn, ſome miles diſtance acroſs the country.

Thus equipped for his enterprize, he walked on leiſurely, like a common traveller, till he was overtaken by the waggon, the driver of which *plied* him in the uſual way to take a place, which, after ſome affected difficulties, he agreed to. But the greateſt difficulty aroſe not from him. The waggon was already ſo full, that when the driver mentioned taking in another, the paſſengers all cried out againſt it with one voice. But his authority was too abſolute to be reſiſted. He fixed his ladder, and ordered them to make room, barely condeſcending to ſay that it was for a gentleman, who had been taken ſuddenly ill, and wanted to go only to the next village. This circumſtance, though treated with brutal diſregard by the reſt, had an immediate effect upon the tender diſpoſition of his deſtined pray, who ſqueezing cloſer to her mother, he crept into his neſt, and ſettled himſelf as conveniently as he could next to her in the ſtraw.

The company, into which he had thus thruſt himſelf, ſeemed to be a repreſentative of all the heteroclite characters of the age. Beſide the young female, whoſe appearance had attracted him, and her mother, a plain good-looking woman, it conſiſted of a mountebank-doctor, and his zany, a methodiſt preacher, a ſtrolling actor and actreſs, a fat ale-wife, a ſervant-maid, who was going to *London* to repair a cracked reputation, a recruiting ſerjeant, and two recruits, an outlawed ſmuggler, and a broken exciſeman.

Though my maſter could not at firſt view diſtinguiſh all their different characters, ſome of them were ſo ſtrongly marked, that he promiſed himſelf the

the higheſt entertainment from the claſhing which he concluded muſt inevitably ariſe in ſuch a groupe, and was reſolved to promote, upon the firſt occaſion. But an accident ſoon gave him that pleaſure, without the trouble of planning for it.

As the weather was warm, and few of the company could be ſuſpected of the delicacy of changing their clothes often, it may be ſuppoſed that every ſavour which aroſe among them was not purely aromatic. My maſter had not been many minutes in his place, when the various odours fuming round him, had ſuch an effect upon his ſenſes, that he undeſignedly breathed a wiſh for a bottle of *ſpirits*.

As he had been introduced under the pretence of being ſick, the ale-wife, who happened to be near him, miſtook his meaning, and thought he wanted a *dram*, not once dreaming of any other uſe of ſpirits. Pulling out a flaſk therefore from under her coat, in the height of good nature, "Spirits! (ſaid ſhe) they are poiſonous ſtuff. "Here is what will do you more good by half!" Then drawing the cork, and taking a ſup, to ſhew him that it was not poiſon, "Drink ſome of this," (continued ſhe, reaching him the flaſk) "and I'll "warrant it will *ſettle* you. It is right *Hollands*."

Before my maſter had time, either to accept or refuſe her offer, the actor, who ſat between them, *ſmoaked* her miſtake, and intercepting the bottle, as ſhe reached acroſs him, cried out in triumph,

"*Bravo, my queen! your gin from* Holland *pure,*
"*My ſtomach ſooner than his head will cure.*"—

Then taking a large *go down*, or two, "*Here, Bel-*
"*videra,*" (added he, giving the bottle to the actreſs) "*in this friendly cup, drown all your ſor-*
"*rows!—Drink, as you love me, deep.*"

His

His faithful mate could not diſobey ſuch a command. She took the bottle, and lifting it to her head, " *Thus to the bottom* (ſaid ſhe) *though it* " *were a mile!*"

But ſhe was interrupted in her intention by the ſmuggler, who lay at her feet, and no ſooner ſmelled the dear liquor, than he raiſed his head, and perceiving what ſhe was about, " Avaſt hal- " ing there," (cried he, ſnatching the bottle from her mouth) " or you'll pump the ſcupper dry." And then going to put it to his own, " Hold" (ſaid the exciſeman, catching his hand with the ſame deſign) " I ſeize this in the king's name, till " I know whether it has paid duty."

The mention of the word *duty* ſet the ſmuggler's blood on fire. " Duty! you ſhark! (ſaid he, graſp- ing the bottle faſter and catching him, in return, by the throat with the other hand) " I'll ſeize " you! damn my eyes and limbs! I'll pay you the " duty, if you don't looſe your hold this moment, " you ſcoundrel! that I will."

Though he gripped the exciſeman's throat ſo hard, that he could not return his compliment in words, he ſcorned to yield the prize without one effort. Giving a twiſt therefore with all his force to wreſt it out of his antagoniſt's hand, though he could not ſucceed, he prevailed ſo far as to turn the mouth of the bottle downwards, by which means the contents were poured full in the face of the ſer- jeant, who lay ſnoring on his back, with his mouth wide open.

Welcome, as ſuch a gueſt would have been in a proper manner, the intruſion thus unexpectedly was not ſo agreeable. He ſtarted up half ſuffocat- ed; and belching his doſe, full in the face of one of

the recruits, "Blood anouns! fire! and fury! (ſputtered he) "What's the meaning of this!"

Juſt as he ſaid this, one of the wheels of the waggon came into a deep hole, with ſuch a plump, that though it did not abſolutely overſet, it tumbled all the paſſengers on top of one another; and inſtantly put a ſtop to the cries of the ale-wife, for the loſs of her liquor.

The ſcreams, oaths, and execrations of the whole company, on this occaſion, would have given my maſter the higheſt delight, had he not been rather too nearly concerned to enjoy the *fun*, the fat ale-wife being thrown ſo full upon him, that he was unable to ſtir, though almoſt ſmothered, ſo that he could not help adding his cries to the concert.

CHAP. XIII.

CHRYSAL's maſter experiences ſome comfortable conſequences from the obliging diſpoſition of the waggoner. He purſues his deſign, by paying uncommon civility to his miſtreſs's mother. Converſation and behaviour of the company. CHRYSAL's *maſter, in the purſuit of his deſign, meets an adventure that cools his paſſion, and reaſſembles the company, when they are all like to be at fault, till one of them luckily hits off the ſcent.*

WHEN the driver had got his waggon out of the hole, and ſeen all that was ſafe about it, he came to know what was the matter with his paſſengers; and having *unpacked* them, my maſter had the pleaſure to hear the young woman propoſe to her mother to walk a little way, till ſome, not the

the moſt agreeable, conſequences of the late diſaſter, ſhould blow off; to which ſhe readily conſented, as he prepared to accompany them both for the ſame reaſon, and in order to have an opportunity of making an acquaintance, which he found he could not ſo well do in the waggon.

But the waggoner was not in the humour to give them that indulgence. When they called to him to let them down, he anſwered ſurlily, that they had not above a couple of miles to their inn; and if he were to ſtop thus every moment, he ſhould not get in, in time, and ſo without any farther ceremony whipped on his horſes. This was a ſevere diſappointment to my maſter, who ſoon grew ſo ſick, that he could not hold up his head all the reſt of the way.

But the qualms of his ſtomach did not affect his conſcience, ſo as to make him in the leaſt alter his deſign. On his arrival at the inn, he made a pretence of the compaſſion which the young girl and her mother had expreſſed for him, to attach himſelf particularly to them, and ply them with wine, by way of return, which falſe modeſty made the mother take ſo freely, as gave him good hopes of ſucceſs.

The converſation and behaviour at ſupper was ſtrictly in the character of the company. The methodiſt made a long grace, and talk'd of religion and temperance, while he eat more than any two at the table, and his eyes were gloating at the ſervant-maid, his fellow-traveller, who ſeemed to liſten to him with great complacency and attention. The actor mimicked the methodiſt to his face, and lolled out his tongue at every one elſe, as they happened to look another way. The actreſs ſpoke in heroics, and turned up her noſe at

every thing and every body. The ſmuggler and exciſeman ſat growling at each other, as if they meant to make a farther trial of their manhood. The ſerjeant talked of his exploits in the wars, and proved his valour by an oath at every word, which his two pupils liſtened to with looks of admiration, that ſhowed they deſigned to imitate that part of his example at leaſt. The ale-wife lamented the loſs of her gin, which, ſhe ſaid, ſhe could not replace with any like it on the whole road. In ſhort, every body eat and talked, and talked and eat together, except the girl and her mother, who were quite loſt in aſtoniſhment at a ſcene ſo new to them, and my maſter, whoſe thoughts were too much taken up with his own ſcheme, to mind any thing elſe.

Accordingly he ſtepped out when ſupper was ended, and engaging the chamber-maid in his intereſt, by a preſent of half a crown, ſhe ſhowed him where his miſtreſs was to ly, and promiſed to ſettle all things in the manner moſt convenient to his deſigns, by putting her and her mother in the bed next to the door, there being two in the room, and placing in the other the ſervant maid, who paid for a bed to herſelf, as her modeſty would not permit her to ſleep with a ſtranger.

As ſoon as the houſe was quiet, and my maſter thought the wine which he had forced upon the mother had ſecured her, he got up, and ſtealing in his ſhirt to the door of their chamber, found it open, upon which he entered, and crept to the bed, where he expected to find his miſtreſs, without ever conſidering what muſt be the conſequence of ſurprizing her in ſuch a manner. Opening the curtains therefore ſoftly, to feel, by the difference of ſize, on which ſide ſhe lay, he had ſcarce put his

his hand upon the clothes, when it was ſeized and gripped ſo hard, that he ſoon loſt all thought of every thing but diſengaging himſelf.

For this purpoſe, he made two or three efforts, but finding them ineffectual, and provoked at the pain his hand ſuffered in the ſtruggle, he diſcharged a blow with the other full in the face of his antagoniſt, who ſpringing directly out of bed, returned it with ſuch uſury, that my poor maſter fell ſprawling on the floor, where he roared out murder with all his might, in which he was immediately joined by thoſe who lay in the other bed, whoſe cries not only raiſed the houſe to his reſcue, but alſo ſaved him from farther violence, his antagoniſt deſiſting to beat him, in order to make his retreat in time.

When thoſe who lay neareſt were aſſembled at the door, half clad, and worſe armed with whatever they could catch up in their confuſion, prudential regard to perſonal ſafety made them all ſtop ſhort, every one finding ſome pretence to excuſe himſelf from going in firſt, and preſſing the poſt of honour upon his neighbour, till they at length raiſed their fears ſo high, that it was uncertain whether any one would venture in before daylight, though the cries ſtill continued, had not the ſmuggler, who did not wake to join them at firſt, put an end to the debate. "Damn you all (ſaid "he, ſnatching a candle from one, and a poker "from another), for a pack of cowardly lubbers! "Will you ſtand *jawing* here, while the people "are murdering?" Then ruſhing in, "Hallo! "(continued he), what's going forward here, in "the devil's name?"

The firſt object that preſented itſelf to his view, when he entered, was my maſter, who was ſtill

upon the ground, unable, between fright and beating, to riſe. Advancing to him, therefore, " Hip, meſſmate! (ſaid he, giving him a kick on " his naked poſteriors); what chear? Speak, if " you are alive!"

The entrance of light reſtoring my maſter to ſome ſpirit, he raiſed his head at this ſalute, and making an effort to get up, " I ſcarce know whe- " ther I am or not (anſwered he), I have been ſo " beaten by that bitch of *Babel*; but ſhe ſhall " pay for it, if I ever recover."——

The place where he was found, directing this accuſation to the perſon in that bed, while ſome of them helped him up, the reſt gathered round it, and aſked the ſervant maid, who lay there, what had induced her to treat the gentleman in ſuch a manner? But the mention of her name ſaved her the trouble of a reply. Before ſhe could ſpeak, " It was not ſhe, (exclaimed my maſter); " I mean the old beldam, mother to the young " witch, whoſe babby-face brought me among " you, and who lay in this bed. It was ſhe who " abuſed me thus, or rather ſome porter in wo- " man's clothes, who paſſed for her, for no wo- " man ever had ſuch ſtrength."—

" I believe you muſt be miſtaken, Sir, (inter- " poſed the exciſeman); the people you mean are " lying quietly in the next bed, and ſeem to be " as much frighted as you are hurt."—

" How! (returned my maſter); did they not " ly in this bed next the door?"

" No, (anſwered the other); Mrs. *Margery* " lies here, as grave and demure as a whore at a " chriſtening."——

" Then the jade of a chamber-maid played me " a trick, (replied my maſter): But who the devil " lay

"lay with her? For I am ſure ſhe was not able "to do what I have ſuffered."——

"As for that (ſaid the actor, who had all the "while been peeping round the bed), I believe it "will be no hard matter to find it out. Theſe "breeches (pulling a pair from under the bolſter) "muſt belong to ſomebody, and will certainly "point out her bed-fellow, if the lady, like a "true amazon, did not wear them herſelf."

CHAP. XIV.

The advantage of a ready aſſurance. The methodiſt accounts curiouſly for what he has done; and turning the tables upon CHRYSAL's *maſter, charges him with robbery, who is thereupon obliged to diſcover himſelf, but is contradicted by one of the company, who boaſts of a curious acquaintance with him in his own character. He is luckily recognized by a footman, whoſe maſter extricates him from his diſtreſs, and makes out the miſtakes that had cauſed ſo much confuſion.*

AS the breeches were immediately known to belong to the methodiſt, they marched away directly to his bedſide, for he had not joined them, and aſked him how he had come to uſe the gentleman in that inhuman manner, ſhewing him my maſter, whom they had dragged along with them.

"Who, I!" (anſwered the methodiſt, affecting all the ſurpriſe of innocence, and determined to deny what he thought could not be proved.) "Heaven forbid that I ſhould uſe any fellow-

"chriſtian

" chriſtian ill. I engage not in ſuch broils. My " warfare is with the ſpirit."——

" And ſometimes with the fleſh too, I believe, " doctor!" (interrupted the actor.) " Nay, it is " in vain to deny it! do you know theſe breeches, " doctor?"——

" Breeches!" (exclaimed he, ſtarting up in real affright, and fumbling under his bolſter,) " O they are gone! they are gone! I am robbed, " ruined and undone."——

" No, doctor, they are not gone, as you ſee! " But the queſtion is, how they came under the " young woman's bed's head, where this gentle- " man received this abuſe?"

" Let him anſwer that!" (replied the metho- diſt, never at a loſs for an impudent lie) " let " him anſwer that! all I know of the matter is " this: Being diſturbed in my reſt, I then knew " not, but now plainly perceive by what cauſe, I " aroſe to pray, as is my cuſtom, when hearing " ſomebody go out of the room, I watched, as " was my duty, to prevent any evil, and follow- " ing the footſteps into another chamber, caught " a man in the very fact of attempting the virtue " of ſome female who lay there; upon which, " expoſtulating with him on the heinouſneſs of " ſuch a crime, he flew at me ſo furiouſly, that I " could ſcarce defend myſelf from him; and if in " the fray he received any hurt, he muſt charge " it to himſelf, as he was the aggreſſor. But this " is not the whole! I now perceive that I was " diſturbed out of my ſleep by his ſtealing my " breeches from under my head, which he accor- " dingly took with him into the room of that " damſel, and therefore I demand juſtice againſt

" him

" him for the attempt, as well as for any loſs I " have ſuffered."——

Saying this, he took the breeches out of the actor's hand, and ſearching the pockets, " It is " too true!" (continued he, gnaſhing his teeth, and wringing his hands in a perfect agony) " It " is too true! I am ruined and undone! I am " robbed of all the money which I had collected " in my pilgrimage to relieve the poor of the " Lord. Twenty golden guineas, beſides ſilver " and other monies. Let him be ſearched! Let " every body be ſearched this moment! I muſt " have my money! I muſt have my money."

As my maſter was a ſtranger to them all, and not bleſſed with a face that could beſpeak much favour, they began to give credit to the charge againſt him, eſpecially as the ſervant maid corroborated it, by ſaying that he had alſo been rummaging for her pockets when that worthy gentleman interrupted him, (for women and all were now gathered to hear the matter canvaſſed) and talked of carrying him before a magiſtrate in the morning, that he might be ſent to jail.

At another time, ſuch a ſcene would have given him the higheſt pleaſure; but he had no taſte for *fun* now. Enraged, therefore, at the iniquity of ſuch a charge, and the inſolence with which they were proceeding to treat him, " Unhand me, at " your perils, you ſcoundrels," (ſaid he, telling them who he was) " Unhand me, this moment. " As for that infamous villain, and his trull, I " charge you to ſecure them directly, and ſend " in my name for a magiſtrate.—I'll make exam- " ples of them at leaſt."

You may conceive with what ſurpriſe they were all ſtruck at hearing this. However, as he gave only,

only his bare word for it, all were not equally ready to believe him. "You, my friend *Scape-*"*grace!*" ſaid the actor, coming and looking him full in the face) "No, no, Sir. Say that to "thoſe who don't know him. I am his intimate "companion; his choſen among ten thouſand. "There is not a fine girl upon the town but we "have *bilked*, nor an houſe in the *hundreds of* "*Drury* where we have not *kicked up a duſt* toge-"ther. He and I are *Pylades* and *Oreſtes*; ſworn "friends and brothers. No, no, that ſtroke won't "paſs upon me."

This made matters worſe than ever with my maſter, adding ridicule to inſult, which was poured upon him in ſuch torrents from every mouth, that he could not ſpeak a word in his own defence. But his diſtreſs laſted not long. The ſervants of a gentleman, who luckily happened to ly at the inn that night, being raiſed by the uproar, one of them knew my maſter through all his diſguiſes. "By your leave, there!" (ſaid he, ruſhing through the crowd, and ſhoving aſide ſome of them who had already laid hold of him) "Are "you all mad, to uſe a gentleman in this man-"ner?" Then addreſſing himſelf to my maſter, "What is the matter, pleaſe your honour? I am "ſorry to ſee your honour in ſuch a pickle. My "maſter (naming him) is in the houſe, and will "do you juſtice. I'll run, and call him up di-"rectly."

Such a teſtimony inſtantly turned the ſcale, and made thoſe who were moſt inſolent to him before, now moſt officious to pay him reſpect and attendance. Accordingly he was removed, without aſking his leave, into his own room, where they were preparing

preparing to humanize his appearance, when the gentleman entered.

Much as my maſter was above the weakneſs of ſhame, he could not avoid feeling ſomething like it, on being caught in ſuch a condition. He was ſitting on the ſide of the bed, covered only with the ragged remains of his ſhirt, which had been torn to pieces in the fray, daubed all over with blood and dirt, and beaten to ſuch a degree that he ſcarce retained one feature of the *human face divine*, which had not loſt all likeneſs of the original.

The gentleman ſtarted at ſuch a ſpectacle, and ſtopped ſhort in doubt whether it could be he, till my maſter's voice ſatisfied him; when he gave orders to have every one concerned in the affair ſecured, and then ſeeing the poor ſufferer taken proper care of, and put to bed, he proceeded to enquire into the matter, the circumſtances of which appeared to be theſe.

The methodiſt having agreed with the ſervant-maid, his fellow-traveller, to have ſome *ſpiritual* converſation with her that night, ſhe promiſed to ly in the bed next the door, and therefore after the chamber-maid had aſſigned them their quarters, as ſhe had ſettled with my maſter, feigned ſome pretence to deſire a change, which the others readily conſented to. Accordingly, as the methodiſt was ſecure of his reception, he came ſoon, and was got into bed to his *diſciple*, when my maſter made his attempt, whoſe hand he ſeized in the manner I have related, and would have beaten him ſtill more ſeverely for his intruſion, had it not been for his crying out, upon which he retreated to his own bed in ſuch a hurry, to eſcape detection, that he forgot his breeches, which

he

he had taken with him for fear ſome of his chamber-fellows ſhould ſearch them, and rob him of eight or ten guineas that he had picked up in the courſe of his preaching about the country, and the actor had made bold to take as lawful prize when they fell into his hands, and afterwards found means to convey to his wife for more ſecurity.

Every thing being thus cleared up, the gentleman adviſed my maſter to drop the affair, as proſecuting it would only expoſe him ſtill more, to which he willingly agreed, having no inclination for any farther trouble about it.

The methodiſt, though, was far from being ſo eaſily pacified for the loſs of the fruits of his ſummer's labour in the vineyard, which he thought worſe of than a thouſand beatings, and was reſolved to recover, if poſſible, in ſpite of all their ſcoffs and inſults. But the detection of the other part of his hiſtory had ſo entirely deſtroyed his credit, that he found it in vain to perſiſt, eſpecially as the actor offered to make oath that he had that very evening applied to him to borrow a ſhilling to pay his reckoning. Curſing them all, therefore, in the bitterneſs of his ſoul, he changed his route, and went upon another preaching progreſs in order to retrieve his loſs, in which pious work he prevailed upon his diſciple and fellow-ſufferer in ſhame, the ſervant maid, whoſe pockets had eſcaped the pillagers, to accompany him.

By this time the waggon was ready to ſet out, when the reſt of the company departed, except the actor and his lady, who were ſo tired with that vulgar way of travelling, that they thought proper to continue their journey in the ſtage coach; and my maſter, who was laid up in ſalves

and

and flannels, had loſt both ability and inclination to purſue his enterprize any farther.

CHAP. XV.

CHRYSAL *gives a ſtriking account of his maſter. He arrives in* London, *and pays a viſit to his miſtreſs. His curious method of courting. His miſtreſs makes him a preſent of half her fortune beforehand, in return for which he promiſes to marry her next day, and then goes to his girl. Difference in his behaviour to the two, naturally accounted for. An uncommon gueſt at a wedding, with as uncommon a manner of celebrating a nuptial-night, ſhew a ſtill more uncommon inſtance of matrimonial complaiſance.* CHRYSAL *changes his ſervice.*

THE ſingularity of my maſter's character gave me a curioſity to take a view of his life, while he was ſleeping off ſome of the effects of his late adventure. He was born in a rank that ſupported the fair hopes of honour and advantage, which the firſt opening of his youth univerſally raiſed. But an error in his education blaſted all thoſe hopes in the bud, and drove him into every extreme of vice and folly which it was deſigned to guard againſt.

The bad conſequences which are ſeen to attend indulging the paſſions too far, often lead weak minds to attempt ſuppreſſing them entirely, without conſidering that the crime is only in the exceſs. The difficulty and pain of this attempt throw ſuch a gloom over the whole appearance,

as hides the native beauty of virtue, and makes it ſeem to be the ſource of unhappineſs to thoſe who view it only in theſe effects, ſo as to terrify them from the purſuit of it.

On this error, pretended enthuſiaſts have in every age founded their influence, by enſlaving the mind to groundleſs terrors, which they never fail to turn to their own advantage. To the conduct of ſuch blind and baſe guides, the mother of my maſter, to whom the ſole care of his education had fallen by the death of her huſband, implicitly reſigned herſelf, and of courſe her ſon; in return for which, they flattered her fanaticiſm and vanity together, with promiſes of breeding him up in the perfection of ſanctity.

For this purpoſe, he was debarred from every innocent recreation, and haraſſed with ſtudies improper for his age. His appetites were mortified with faſting; his reſt was broken to chaunt hymns, and pray; nor was he allowed even to ſpeak but in ſcripture-phraſe; and all as the indiſpenſible duties of virtue and religion.

Such a ſlavery naturally gave him ſo great an averſion to every thing that bore their names, that the moment he became his own maſter, he placed the ſupreme pleaſure of his life, in acting in contradiction to them, by every inſtance of expenſive and vicious exceſs, in which he ſquandered away the inheritance of his anceſtors, and broke his conſtitution with a rapidity, that gave ſcandal to vice, put folly out of countenance, and made his name a by-word in an age of exceſſes. And in this ſituation he was, when I came into his poſſeſſion.

Though it was near noon before he awoke, the gentleman whoſe preſence had ſo luckily relieved him the night before, waited to ſee him, when he compleated

compleated his kindeſs, by lending him money to defray his expences up to town, upon which he ſent for his equipage, and ſet off without farther concern at what had happened.

On his arrival at *London*, he drove directly to the laſt place, which any other man in his circumſtances would have thought of going to. This was the houſe of a lady of large fortune, to whom he had paid his addreſſes, ſince his extravagance had diſſipated his own; and with this peculiar honeſty, that he never even pretended a regard to herſelf.

The ſucceſs of ſuch a courtſhip muſt appear improbable; but there is no accounting for the caprice of woman. She had taken a liking to him, which ſeemed to riſe in proportion to the ſlights he ſhewed her, and was reſolved to gratify it, if only nominally, for ſhe could expect no more, at the hazard of every happineſs of life.

It may be ſuppoſed, that the ſight of him, in ſuch a condition, ſtruck her ſeverely. She flew to him, threw her arms around his neck, and bemoaned his misfortune in the moſt paſſionate terms. But that was not what he wanted. Shaking her off, without feigning the leaſt return to her fondneſs, "Pſha!" (ſaid he) "leave off this ſtuff; and "let me know whether you have got the money "I told you I ſhould want to pay off thoſe debts "of honour! If you have, and will alſo give me "up the reſt of your fortune, without reſerve, I'll "marry you."

"Will you?" (exclaimed ſhe, in rapture) "then "you have it, if it were ten times as much. Here "it is," (opening a bureau, and reaching him an "handful of bank-notes) "I *ſold out* half my for-"tune to raiſe it, the very day you ſpoke to me."

" I wiſh I had known that," (ſaid he, putting the notes in his pocket) " and then I might have " made my excurſion into the country longer. " Farewell! I'll call upon you to-morrow even- " ing, and conclude the job. Do you have the " hangman and halter ready."

" What do you mean? I don't underſtand " you."

" What ſhould I mean, but the parſon, and the " ring. Is not that an halter! And does not he " hang us up with it for life?"

" But can't you ſtay a few moments! I want to " know how you come in that condition!"

" It was only a ſcrape about a wench. I'll tell " you the particulars another time. My girl " would not forgive me, if ſhe knew I was ſo " long in town, without going to her."

" But will you certainly come to-morrow? I " am afraid you will diſappoint me, now you " have got what you wanted."

" Never fear! I have not got what I want, " while you have a ſhilling left in the world."

Saying which, he walked away, without deigning to take any farther leave.

But his behaviour was not ſo cavalier, where he was going. The moment he entered his miſtreſs's room, ſhe flew at him, not with the fondneſs of a dove. " So! (ſaid ſhe) what bawdy-houſe have " you been breaking up now? You do well to " come to me in ſuch a pickle; but I'll ſee you " damn'd before I take the trouble of nurſing " you."

" Don't be in a paſſion, my love," (ſaid he, taking her in his arms, and giving her a kiſs); " It " is no ſuch thing. I fell among a gang of foot-

" pads,

" pads, who abuſed me in this manner, becauſe I " made reſiſtance."

" A very likely ſtory truly, invented, I ſuppoſe, " to excuſe your not bringing me money! but if " that is the caſe, you may go to the devil from " whence you came. I'll not be troubled with " your company."

" No, my dear, I never come to you empty-" handed, let me do as I will elſewhere." With which words he pulled out one of the bank-notes he had juſt got from the other, and giving it to her, put her at length in a good humour.

I ſee your indignation at a man's acting in ſuch a manner; but you could expect no other. The ſame baſeneſs of temper which could treat the other woman with inſult, naturally ſubmitted to be inſulted by this.

You imagine that his miſtreſs muſt have uncommon attractions, to give her ſuch power over him! You judge right. Her's were uncommon indeed. She had loſt her hair and teeth in a ſalivation, and was allowed to be the moſt profligate of her profeſſion; charms ſufficient to attach a man of his taſte.

My maſter having thus happily made his peace, the loving couple ſat down to their bottle, as uſual, over which happening to mention his intended marriage the next day, her delicacy took ſuch offence, that ſhe poſitively refuſed to conſent to it, till he promiſed not only that ſhe ſhould be preſent, but alſo to return, and ſpend his wedding night with her, to prove her triumph over the happy bride.

Accordingly, he took her with him the next evening, and introducing her to the expecting fair one, " I have brought my girl (ſaid he) to grace

" our nuptials. The dear creature inſiſted upon " it; and you know I can't refuſe her any thing." The bride elect was ſo enraptured at the thought of her approaching happineſs, that ſhe had no ſenſe of the inſult, but received her with politeneſs, perhaps not without a mixture of pride on the occaſion.

There are ſome ſcenes, the extravagance of which, *beggars deſcription*. I ſhall therefore only ſay, that the behaviour of the company was in character, during the ceremony and entertainment, at the end of which the bridegroom alleging his promiſe to go back with his miſtreſs, the convenient bride not only conſented, but alſo propoſed preparing an apartment for her, in her own houſe, to ſave him that trouble for the future, and procure for herſelf the pleaſure of his company; a ſcheme that was actually carried into execution, while ſhe had an houſe to receive her; which was not very long, a continuance of the ſame extravagance that had diſſipated his own fortune, ſoon diſſipating her's alſo.

It may be imagined that I did not remain long in the poſſeſſion of ſuch a maſter. He *loſt me*, the next evening after his marriage, on a bet, that he could repeat the *Lord's Prayer*, which he laid on purpoſe to loſe, in order to prove how entirely he had got rid of the prejudices of education.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVI.

CHRYSAL *makes ſome reflections, not likely to be much regarded. His maſter pays a love viſit to a young lady, whoſe father interpoſes unpolitely, and makes ſome out-of-the-way objections.* CHRYSAL's *maſter hits upon a ſcheme for getting over them. He propoſes marriage on certain terms, which are agreed to, and the day fixed at a little diſtance.*

I HAVE on former occaſions given you a ſufficient deſcription how *people of faſhion* ſpend their time in gaming-houſes, where, though every meeting produces new misfortunes to ſome of the company, there is ſuch a fameneſs in the manner, as will not bear repetition, and muſt cloy any creature not abſolutely under infatuation, or obliged to make a trade of it for bread: as neither of which was the caſe of my *new* maſter, he left the company early, to purſue pleaſures more in his own taſte.

In no inſtance are the contradictions in human conduct ſo ſtrongly ſhown, as in that of man to woman. He who would loſe his life rather than violate the ſtricteſt principles of honour or honeſty (as they are abſurdly diſtinguiſhed from each other); in his intercourſe with another man, not only ſcruples not to ſtudy deceit, and practiſe the blackeſt and baſeſt villanies againſt woman, but will even glory in the ſucceſs of them, when accompliſhed, without ſhowing remorſe in himſelf, or meeting reproof from others.

The reaſon of this is generally ſaid to be man's partiality to his own cauſe, which, as he has the power

power of judging in his hands, whether by uſurpation or right, it matters not, makes him pardon, in others, the crime he would be glad to commit himſelf.

But without exculpating him in the leaſt, woman bears an heavy ſhare in the blame of her ſex's ruin. I mean not here by her immediate conſent in her own caſe, but by the countenance which ſhe ſhows to the perpetrators of it in that of others; it being as certain in fact, as it is groſs and abſurd to thought, that the ſureſt recommendation to the general favour of women, is the fame of having ruined numbers of them.

Whether this proceeds from a vain ambition of triumphing over the triumpher, or an affectation of diſdaining to eſpouſe the cauſe of the fallen, as having forfeited the common regards of humanity, makes no difference in the conſequence, whatever it may in the crime, as it opens an opportunity to the ſpoiler to extend his conqueſts often upon themſelves, in the midſt of their ſecurity; whereas, would women ſhow a true ſenſe of the honour of their ſex, by refuſing every kind of intercourſe with ſuch as had ever violated it, man's partiality to himſelf would loſe its effect, and all his deſigns upon them be reſtrained within the proper boundaries of virtue.

From the place where I came into the poſſeſſion of my *new* maſter, he went to pay a viſit to a young lady of uncommon beauty and merit, whom he was violently in love with; that is, he was earneſtly bent upon gratifying his deſire for her, at the expence of her ruin; an enterprize for which he was eminently qualified, being poſſeſſed of all the advantages of youth, fortune, and addreſs, and abſolutely free from every reſtraint

of

of principle, as he had proved on ſeveral ſucceſsful occaſions of the ſame kind. The reception he met, ſhowed that he had made an intereſt in her heart; but all his experience in the ſcience of intrigue, could not elude the vigilance of her virtue for a moment, nor find the leaſt opening for any attack upon her honour.

Such difficulties only redoubled his ardour. As he was conſidering therefore, next morning, how he ſhould proceed, he was interrupted in his meditations by a viſit from his miſtreſs's father. After ſome time ſpent in common chat, "I have "taken the liberty to wait upon you, Sir (ſaid "the father), about an affair, the importance of "which, to my happineſs, will apologize for any "ſeeming unpoliteneſs in it. I have for ſome "time taken notice of the frequency of your vi"ſits to my houſe, the honour of which I am "juſtly ſenſible of, but not ſo far dazzled by, "but I can ſee the motive of them through it; "and therefore muſt, for many reaſons, beg leave "to deſire that you will diſcontinue them."

"I—I—I don't underſtand you, Sir, (anſwered "my maſter, a good deal diſconcerted at ſo un"expected an addreſs); I have no motive that I "deſire to conceal, or is anyway inconſiſtent "with the character of a gentleman."

"Pardon me, Sir, (replied the other); I mean "no ſuch thing. But yet, what may be thought "conſiſtent with that character in ſome things, "may be very inconſiſtent with the happineſs of "a father. To be plain, Sir, I am not ſo unac"quainted with the world, but I can ſee that all "your viſits are paid to my daughter; and as ſhe "is not upon a level with you, either in family "or fortune, for a wife, I muſt repeat my requeſt

"that

" that you will drop a purſuit which muſt there-
" fore have another view."

" You do injuſtice to your daughter (returned
" my maſter, recovered from his ſurprize, and
" convinced that it was in vain to diſſemble any
" longer), to ſay that ſhe is not upon a level with
" any man alive. I am above the vain pride of
" family; and as to fortune, my own ſatisfies
" me, without hazarding my happineſs to ſeek
" for more."

" Theſe (ſaid the lady's father) are truly the
" ſentiments of a gentleman, nor have I any
" doubt of the ſincerity with which you declare
" them. But there are other conſiderations that
" make it impoſſible to carry them into execu-
" tion. You and my daughter profeſs different
" principles of religion; and as I can by no
" means expect that you ſhould change your's,
" ſo I hope ſhe is too firmly eſtabliſhed in her's,
" to quit them for any worldly honour or advan-
" tage."

This was a ſtroke my maſter was not prepared for. He acquieſced therefore ſeemingly, with the beſt grace he could, to avoid entering more explicitly into the ſubject, till he ſhould have time to concert meaſures for getting over this new difficulty; for his honour was now piqued; and he reſolved to ſtop at nothing, if only to puniſh the inſolence of her father, in preſuming to forbid him his houſe.

Accordingly, after revolving a variety of ſchemes, he fixed upon one which he thought could not fail. Big with this hope, he went next morning to wait upon his miſtreſs, notwithſtanding the interdiction of her father, and finding her alone, after ſome moments of mutual confuſion,

on

on the circumſtances of ſuch a meeting, "I—I—"I—I am come, Madam, (ſaid my maſter, heſi-"tating, and bluſhing as he ſpoke); I am come "in conſequence of what paſſed between your "father and me yeſterday, of which I preſume "he has informed you. It never was my deſign "to diſavow a paſſion, upon which depends the "happineſs of my life. I only waited till ſome "particular circumſtances ſhould enable me to "declare it with more convenience. But as he "has made the diſcovery, that reſerve is no long-"er neceſſary. If therefore, Madam, I can be "ſo happy as to find favour in your ſight, all his "objections I preſume will be removed, by my "offering to marry you directly, on this ſole con-"dition, that our marriage ſhall be kept invio-"lably ſecret, till I have accompliſhed ſome af-"fairs, to which you muſt be ſenſible the differ-"ence of our religions would be a prejudice. "The ceremony ſhall be performed by any cler-"gyman you pleaſe, in the preſence of your fa-"ther, and any other witneſſes in whoſe ſecrecy we "can confide, and every thing done that can "convince you of the ſincerity and honour of "my attachment. Speak then, deareſt Madam, "and make me happy, by complying with a pro-"poſal that has your happineſs in view, equally "with my own."

"I ſhould be unworthy of the honour you do "me," (anſwered ſhe, the bluſh of true modeſty heightening the charms of her beauty) "if I could "let it interfere with ſuperior obligations. When "the approbation of my father gives a proper "ſanction to your application to me, you will "probably find no great difficulty in making my "inclination go hand in hand with my duty."

Her

Her father juſt then entering, relieved her from the embarraſſment of any farther converſation upon ſo delicate a ſubject, and ſhe withdrew. But my maſter was under no ſuch difficulty. Encouraged by a reply ſo favourable to his hopes, he directly repeated his propoſal to her father, who promiſed him a deciſive anſwer next morning.

As the manner of his reception left him no room to doubt of his ſucceſs, he went again, at the time appointed, when the father gave his conſent without difficulty, as did his miſtreſs, ſtipulating only for a ſhort delay till ſhe ſhould return from the wedding of a young lady, her couſin, who lived at ſome diſtance in the country, and had engaged her to attend her upon that occaſion. As he could make no juſt objection to this, however diſagreeable, ſuſpenſion of his hopes, he conſented, with a compliment that his reſolution was too firmly fixed for any time to make him change it, and then took his leave, exulting at the ſucceſs of his project.

CHAP. XVII.

CHRYSAL's maſter is privately married. Not ſatisfied with one wife for love, he wants another for money. He propoſes the matter to his wife, on whoſe refuſal he diſcloſes his grand ſcheme; in which, deep as it is laid, he has the mortification to find himſelf anticipated, and his own weapons turned upon himſelf. Conſequences of this diſcovery. CHRYSAL's maſter takes a common method of ſilencing ſcandal. CHRYSAL changes his ſervice.

THE ſmiles of hope make the ſunſhine of life, as the mind is then too intent upon the object

ject in expectation, to ſee the inconveniences which afterwards embitter the enjoyment of it. The abſence of his miſtreſs, though conſiderably longer than he had apprehended, paſſed away pleaſantly, in the thought of his approaching happineſs. As ſoon as ſhe returned, therefore, he directly claimed the performance of her promiſe; to which all parties conſenting, they were married by his own chaplain in the private manner he deſired.

Poſſeſſed thus of his wiſhes, his next care was to enjoy them with the moſt convenience to himſelf. For this purpoſe he took an houſe next to his own, and opening a ſecret communication between them, he removed her thither, as he could not take her directly home without declaring his marriage.

Mortifying as the myſterious appearance of ſuch a ſituation muſt have been to her, ſhe made no objection, but complied implicitly, in that and every thing elſe, as if ſhe had no will but his. Paſſions merely ſenſual are ſoon ſated. Though the reſemblance of this intercourſe to an intrigue, heightened the pleaſure of it, he had not carried it on long, when an opportunity of marrying to great advantage, in the phraſe of the world, awoke his ambition, and gave his wiſhes another turn.

After ſome little conflict with himſelf, in which the object in view proved too powerful for that in poſſeſſion, he reſolved to break the matter to his wife. Accordingly, as they ſat together one morning at breakfaſt, after ſome expreſſions of uncommon tenderneſs, "The regard which my dear-
"eſt girl has always ſhewn for me," (ſaid he, bluſhing at his own baſeneſs as he ſpoke,) "con-
"vinces me that ſhe will not only take pleaſure
"to hear of any thing to my advantage, but alſo
"forward it as far as may be in her power."

"I hope no action of my life," (answered she, surprised at his speaking in such a manner) "since "I have been married to you, has given any rea- "son to doubt either my duty or affection, that "you should imagine such a preface necessary to "introduce whatever you think proper to com- "mand."

"Very true, my dearest life. But—but—but "there are some things, the nature of which re- "quires delicacy, even to you, whose understand- "ing is superior to the foibles of your sex. You "know the young *lady Worthland!* I have re- "ceived intimation that my addresses would not "be unacceptable to her. Now, as her rank and "fortune would entitle me to expect the first ho- "nours in the state, I have that confidence in the "attachment and love of my dearest girl, as to "think that you will not oppose my interest."—

"As how?" (replied she eagerly, alarmed at the hint, but unwilling to think so meanly of him as to understand it) "As how? What interest "can you possibly have in her rank and fortune?"

"The interest which the law gives an husband. "Possession! absolute possession of the whole."—

"An husband? Good God! how can that be? "Are you not already married?"——

"True, my dearest life! but as that marriage "is a secret, if it can be kept so, it will be no "obstacle. You shall remain as you are, the wife "of my love, and I will be only the husband of "her fortune."——

"How you men, whose minds are stronger, "take pleasure in playing with the weakness of "woman? The very mention of such a thing, "even in jest, (for it is impossible you can be se- "rious) strikes me with horror."——

"In

" In jeſt! I am ſerious, upon my honour; and " expect your immediate compliance, as a proof " of your duty and affection."

" And can you mention honour, in the ſame " breath with ſuch a baſe propoſal? What a pro- " fanation of the word! But whether you are ſe- " rious, or not, I muſt be ſo on ſuch an occa- " ſion; and therefore I declare that I never will " ſacrifice both honour and conſcience, by giv- " ing what you are pleaſed to call a proof of du- " ty and affection, but what would really prove " that I had neither."——

" This romantic ſpirit, child, much as you " think it becomes you, is all thrown away. I " am determined, and you muſt ſubmit. But, " let me tell you, that on the manner of that " ſubmiſſion depends your future welfare. If " you comply properly with my propoſal, I will " make a ſettlement upon you that ſhall exceed " any expectations you could naturally have had " in life, and remain your huſband in every thing " but the empty name. But, if you attempt " making the leaſt oppoſition to my will, I caſt " you off from this moment to beggary and ſhame; " nor ſhall any late repentance ever bring me to " receive you again; ſo conſider the conſequence " before you raſhly run upon your ruin; I ſhall " expect your final reſolution to-morrow."——

" For that, you need not wait a moment. I " fear no conſequence that can attend my doing " what is right. The duty of obedience I have " fulfilled in its utmoſt extent, by immuring my- " ſelf thus, and forfeiting my good name, to keep " your ſecret; but while my conſcience witneſſed " for the purity of my heart, I regarded not the " preſent cenſure of the world, no more than I " do now, from the ſame principle of virtuous

" reſolution, your vain threats; for in ſuch a light " the laws of my country enable me to hold " them."——

" The laws of your country, madam! Then " claim their protection, if you pleaſe; but you " will find that they afford none to you. Such " marriages as your's, between people profeſſing " different religions, are made void by thoſe laws; " and therefore, if you think proper to depend " upon them, I give you this notice, that you " have nothing to expect from me but what they " ſhall procure you."——

" And was this your motive" (returned ſhe, with a ſpirit raiſed by indignation) " for deſir- " ing a private marriage? Impoſſible! you could " not, cannot be ſo baſe. You only have a mind " to try my reſolution, which you ſhall ever find " immoveable in this, and every cauſe of virtue " and honour."——

" Madam, I have no more time to triffe in this " manner; therefore, once more I deſire you to " let me know your final determination; for, not- " withſtanding this behaviour, I ſtill have ſuch a " regard for you, that I am unwilling to take an " anſwer that muſt ſeparate us for ever. Think " then, before you ſpeak; and let my making " you this generous offer, and preventing your " expoſing yourſelf in vain, teach you a return " of proper gratitude."

" I want not a moment to determine between " virtue and vice, infamy and honour."——

" Then take the conſequence, and blame your- " ſelf when it is too late."——

" I will, if any blame falls on me. And now " that I ſee you are ſerious, in return for the no- " tice you have ſo generouſly given me, I let you " know that I have obviated the advantage you

" flatter

" flatter yourſelf you have over me, by conform-
" ing *legally* to your religion, before I was mar-
" ried to you."——

" Confuſion! what is that you ſay? When,
" where did you conform?"——

" When I went to the wedding of my couſin,
" as you will find upon enquiry, which I adviſe
" you to make, before you proceed farther in a
" ſcheme that can only expoſe you to worſe in-
" famy than that with which you threatened me."

" Infernal witch! was this your love?"——

" No; it was the prudence of my friends."

" My love could harbour no doubt of you; but
" they knew you better, and took this honeſt,
" wiſe precaution, to guard againſt villany, which
" I now am ſenſible they foreſaw; and therefore,
" as you have thought proper to refer me to the
" law, I now tell you that I will immediately
" claim its protection, and declare my marriage,
" nor ſuffer any longer in the opinion of the world
" by a ſecrecy that was enjoined for ſo baſe a pur-
" poſe, by which I ſhall at leaſt have the ſatisfac-
" tion of ſaving another woman from falling in-
" to the ſnare laid for her."——

Saying this, ſhe flung out of the room, to conceal tears which ſhe thought would betray a weakneſs unworthy of her, and could no longer reſtrain.

The nature of my maſter's meditations on this diſcovery, may be eaſily conceived. He curſed that fooliſh fondneſs which had thus led him blindfold into his own ſnare, and damn'd all womankind, in revenge for being foiled at his own weapons by one of the ſex.

When he had vented his rage in this manner for ſome time, a ſudden gleam of hope flattered him, that what ſhe ſaid might poſſibly have been

only the inſtantaneous ſuggeſtion of reſentment and deſpair, without being really true. Pleaſed with the thought, he ſent directly to make the proper enquiry, the reſult of which confirmed the defeat of all his deſigns. But this was not the only mortification he ſuffered. His wife, the moment ſhe left him, went to her father, and diſcovering to him her huſband's baſeneſs, he ſupported her in her reſolution of declaring her marriage, as the moſt proper means to prevent his forming any farther ſchemes againſt her.

The conſequence is obvious. The public received ſuch a curious piece of ſcandal with pleaſure, and paid reſpect to his wife, if only to ſhew contempt for him; particularly the women, who made her's the cauſe of the ſex, as he had precluded all farther deſigns upon himſelf by marriage.

This though, however flattering to her vanity and reſentment at the time, only widened a breach, that ſhe wiſhed to cloſe. His pride was piqued to diſappoint her deſign, as ſhe had his, and he left her to languiſh out the reſt of her life in worſe than widowhood, and repent of the folly of attempting to attach to herſelf a man who ſhe knew had betrayed others of the ſex.

As for my maſter, this detection made him deſperate. He threw off every appearance of regard even to common decency, which he thought could no longer be of uſe to him, and determined to bear down ſcandal, by glorying in his vices; in the performance of which gallant reſolution, he gave me to a ſtage-dancer, who gave me to an half-pay officer, who gave me to a tavern-keeper, *&c.*—

CHAP. XVIII.

CHRYSAL gives an account of certain intereſting occurrences. An extraordinary definition of a common word. Great expectations diſappointed. The conſequence of planning in the cloſet the operations of the field, with the origin of that ſagacious practice.

(CHRYSAL's *maſter in the courſe of his journey from* VIENNA *to* LISBON, *falls in with one of the armies engaged in carrying on the war.*)

"The army through which my maſter was obliged to paſs, as I have ſaid, though paid by *England*, and the flower of it compoſed of *Britons*, was commanded by a *German* general, in diſgraceful acknowledgment of the want of military merit, equal to ſuch a charge, in the natives."—*Vol.* II.

Such an indignity to a people ever famed in war, and jealous of their honour, muſt appear unaccountable; but the web of human policy is woven in ſo myſterious a manner, as to reconcile inconſiſtencies ſtill harder to be accounted for, on the common principles of reaſon.

When this army was firſt formed, the command of it was given to a *Briton*, whoſe military abilities had, in their opening dawn, ſaved his country from ruin, and now, in their meridian, promiſed to raiſe his name to an equality in glory, with thoſe of moſt renown, in the long liſt of heroes; but the wiſdom of thoſe meaſures, by which the world is governed, defeated expectations ſo juſtly founded, and deprived his country for ever of the advantage of ſuch abilities.

As the profeſſed deſign of this army was only to *obſerve* the motions of the *French*, and defend the allies

allies of *England* from their attacks, it was judged ſufficient to make it barely of ſuch force, as might effect that defence, with the aſſiſtance of thoſe allies themſelves. Though an inferior army may act ſucceſsfully on the defenſive, in repelling an immediate aſſault upon itſelf, yet where its attention is extended to the defence of diſtant objects, the neceſſity of dividing ſuch inferior ſtrength, enhances the diſproportion, ſo as not only to defeat the deſign, but alſo often to involve the defenders in the ruin they were meant to avert from others.

The danger of ſuch an event was evident in the preſent caſe; but ſome diviſions in the *Engliſh* councils made it impoſſible to obviate it, by making the force of the army equal to the end it was appointed for; certain *patriots* having oppoſed the forming of any ſuch army at all, with ſo plauſible, and popular arguments, that the ſovereign was obliged to be ſatisfied, for the preſent, with the ſhadow of one, as I may ſay, in expectation of being able to reinforce it, by degrees, as the *patriots* expected to make their compliance with ſuch a meaſure, the means for gaining the end of their patriotiſm, that is, raiſing themſelves to power.

You ſeem ſurprized at my calling men, who could act with ſuch a view, and oppoſe a meaſure, which I have ſaid to be founded on every motive of honour and juſtice, by the reſpectable name of *patriots*. But in this, as in very many other things, the name remains, after the idea it was deſigned to repreſent is loſt. *Patriotiſm*, that once meant the nobleſt exertion of diſintereſted virtue, by which every attention to private advantage was ſacrificed to the public good, ſignifies now no more, than an oppoſition to the meaſures of government, whether right or wrong, ſupported by ſuch pretences as are moſt likely to inflame the paſſions of the people,

people, till the governors are ſo embarraſſed, as to be obliged to admit the patriots to a ſhare of their power, when they directly throw off the maſk, for ſome other to take up; and do themſelves the very things which they before declaimed againſt with ſuch noiſe and vehemence. By this general deſcription I do not abſolutely preclude a few particular exceptions; nor deny the merit of ſome men who, even in modern times, have deſerved the name, in all the honour of its original meaning.

The nature of ſuch a command, and the improbability of its ſucceſs, would have deterred any man from accepting it, who was not actuated by principles ſo truly patriotic, as to make him diſregard every other motive, for the mere poſſibility of ſerving his country.

As the abilities of the general often make up for the weakneſs of an army, the *Britons* under his command, confiding in him, looked upon the ſuperior force of their enemies with pleaſure, as promiſing them the greater glory. Nor was this confidence without foundation: he had led them to victory before, when they ſcarce deſerved the name of regular forces; and had ſince, with unwearied care, aſſiſted their native valour with every advantage of the moſt judicious diſcipline. Under ſuch a commander, therefore, what might not ſuch troops hope to do? But a difficulty, ſtill more diſtreſſing than the inferiority of his force, diſappointed all thoſe hopes.

Military operations are ſo complicated, that every motion of an army requires a correſpondent one, in that oppoſed to it. The obvious truth of this, ſhows the ſagacity of planning in the cloſet the operations of the field. Particular objects indeed may be propoſed, but the method of accompliſhing them muſt be left to the judgment of the commander,

commander, as occaſion may direct, it being abſolutely impoſſible to foreſee and provide for all the inſtantaneous contingencies which muſt make an immediate deviation from any ſyſtem that could have been laid down, indiſpenſably neceſſary. Where this diſcretionary power is abridged, and the motions of a general marked out for him, it muſt be from the fault of his adverſaries, if he performs any thing of conſequence.

The firſt who introduced this ſcheme of ſhackling a commander, were churchmen, who, puffed up by the power which their influence over the weakneſs of princes gave them, diſdained to appear incapable of any thing; and therefore, as their want of military knowledge would not permit their undertaking the actual command of armies, they took this method of ſhowing their abilities and authority, by directing how the commanders of them ſhould proceed; a method, however abſurd in itſelf, ſo flattering to human ſelf-ſufficiency, that princes adopted it after, when age or infirmity prevented their leading their forces to the field.

CHAP. XIX.

Continued. The natural event of ſuch a ſituation. The general, victorious over himſelf, quits the purſuit of military glory for the practice of the virtues of peace. Perfidy of the enemy juſtly puniſhed. The army is formed again under the command of a GERMAN, *and a ſugar-plum given to the* ENGLISH, *to ſtop their mouths at ſuch an inſult.*

DISTRESSED more by directions of this kind, than even by the weakneſs of his army, the *Britiſh*

Britiſh general took the field, rather in obedience to his duty than from any hope of ſucceſs, and literally to *obſerve* the motions of an enemy, whom he was not able to oppoſe.

The event was as he foreſaw. The enemy, ſuperior in ſtrength, and at liberty to ſeize every advantage, while he could only act in conſequence of orders given at a diſtance, and impoſſible to be always proper, ſoon turned his attention from the defence of others, to the preſervation of his own army. But, even this, the circumſtances he was in, made it impoſſible for all his judgment and intrepidity to effect, though diſplayed in a manner that made his name immortal, otherwiſe than by giving up the countries he was ſent to defend, on the beſt terms he could procure, and diſarming his own troops.

Mortifying as ſuch a neceſſity muſt have been to an heart panting for glory, his conduct, under it, reflected more real honour upon him, than any victory, gained againſt probability, at the imminent hazard of the loſs of his whole army, could have done, as it ſhowed that he was ſuperior even to the deſire of fame, when claſhing with the intereſt of his country.

But they who had driven him to this neceſſity, by diſabling him from purſuing the dictates of his own judgment, thought proper to view his conduct in another light, and cenſure in him their own errors. The honeſt indignation of conſcious virtue could not brook treatment ſo diſingenuous. In juſtice to himſelf, therefore, he reſigned all military command, and, quitting the profeſſion of arms for ever, devoted the remainder of his days to the practice of every virtue of peace.

As to the countries which he had been thus diſappointed from defending, their troubles ended not

not ſo eaſily. The enemy, in the inſolence of power, ſoon broke through the terms on which they had been given up, and treated the army that had ſubmitted on the ſecurity of public faith, with every inſtance of the moſt flagrant injuſtice.

All obligations are mutual. The breach of one party therefore diſengages the other. Provoked by ſuch perfidy, the injured army joined the natives, and aroſe with all the fury of revenge upon their oppreſſors. Such attacks are not to be reſiſted. The tyrants were driven out of all their conqueſts; and, to prevent their recovery of them, the army was formed again, of force ſufficient to accompliſh the end propoſed, and the command of it given to a *German* of proved abilities, free from the reſtrictions which had made thoſe of the late commander of no effect, his miſcarriage having ſhown the abſurdity of them; and the *Engliſh patriots*, who had before oppoſed the raiſing any ſuch army, having ſucceeded in their views of getting into power, now aided the deſign with all their influence; "though, to palliate their "diſgrace, and to ſatisfy the jealouſy of the *Engliſh*, they had the imaginary privilege of being "immediately under a commander of their own, "and ſubject only to their own laws, in all "things except the operations of the war, when "they were of neceſſity to obey the *German* "commander in chief."—*Vol.* II.

F I N I S.

BRITISH MUSEUM 11 FEB 75